

THE IRISH READER

NO. 150

leir na  
LÁSTEADÁIB  
CÍOFSCAILA.

A



UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACULTY

0000205000

THIRD EDITION—REVISED.



E. Andrews







Irish grammar, by the  
Christian Brothers



1906

Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

THIRD EDITION - REVISED.

CAHILL & CO., Printers, Dublin.

## PREFACE.

---

THE Grammar of Spoken Irish presents many difficulties owing to the forms peculiar to different places, but as the literary usage embraces the dialects current in different localities, save a few archaic survivals, the literary usage has been adopted as the standard of this grammar.

Modern Irish may be said to date from the end of the 16th, or the beginning of the 17th century. At the commencement of the modern period many forms are found which belong to an earlier period, and many forms which have since grown obsolete, side by side with those by which they have since been replaced. We have deemed it advisable not to introduce into this grammar any obsolete grammatical forms, how prominent soever they may be in early modern literature. However, as students preparing for public examinations are frequently required to read the works of early modern authors, we have added in the present edition an appendix containing the verb-system of early modern Irish. Such early modern grammatical forms as survive only within a small area are not given in the large type; on the other hand, those grammatical forms generally found in literature, and which are still in use in any one of the three Irish-speaking Provinces, are given in the large print in preference to those more generally used by Irish speakers, but which are not found in literary works. It is hoped that this method may help to popularise Irish literature, and to reconcile in some degree the slight discrepancies which exist between the spoken and the literary usages.

In the present Grammar the letters *t*, *n*, and *p* are reckoned among the aspirable consonants, and *r* is omitted

from the eclipsable ones. The declension of verbal nouns is transferred from the third declension to the chapter on the verbs. A collection of heteroclite nouns is inserted. The usual declension of the personal pronouns is not employed, and the terms Conjunctive and Disjunctive pronouns are adopted. The naming of the four principal parts of an Irish verb, the treatment of the Autonomous form of conjugation, the rejection of compound prepositions, infinitive mood, and present participle form a few of the features of this grammar. Among the appendices will be found lists of words belonging to the various declensions, of verbs of beth conjugation, and of irregular verbal nouns.

Many of the rules have been taken from the "O'Growney Series" and from the "Gaelic Journal." The grammars of Neilson, O'Donovan, Bourke, Craig, and of many other authors, have been consulted. The chapter on the classification of the uses of the prepositions is based on Dr. Atkinson's edition of Keating's *Táin Bóirg-Gáide an Báir*. Some of the sentences which illustrate the rules have been culled, with the author's permission, from the *Mion-Cáint* of the Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P.

In the present edition the enunciation of the rule *Caoi te caol & teatán te teatán* has been modified so as to bring it more into harmony with the spoken language. The sections on the Relative pronouns, Demonstrative pronouns, Adverbs, and Conjunctions have been greatly enlarged and improved. A large collection of Idiomatic expressions and an exhaustive Index have been also added.

The Christian Brothers acknowledge with pleasure their indebtedness to Mr. John McNeill, B.A., and Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P., for their generous and invaluable aid in the production of this grammar. To Mr. R. J. O'Mulrenin, M.A., Mr. J. H. Lloyd, to Mr. Shortall, and to many other friends their best thanks are due, and gratefully tendered.

## CONTENTS.

---

	Page
<b>The Letters</b> ...	1
<b>Sounds of the Vowels</b> ...	2
<b>The Diphthongs</b> ...	2
<b>The Triphthongs</b> ...	3
<b>Consonants, Division of the</b> ...	4
" <b>Combination of the</b> ...	5
<b>Accent</b> ...	6
" <b>Words distinguished by</b> ...	7
<b>Obscure Sounds of the Vowels</b> ...	7
<b>Aspiration, Explanation of</b> ...	9
" <b>How marked</b> ...	10
" <b>Rules for</b> ...	11
<b>Eclipsis</b> ...	13
" <b>Rules for</b> ...	15
" <b>Insertion of n</b> ...	16
" <b>c</b> ...	17
" <b>h</b> ...	18
<b>Attenuation and Broadening</b> ...	18
<b>caol le caol</b> & <b>leatán le leatán</b> ...	19
<b>Syncope, Explanation of</b> ...	20
" <b>Examples of</b> ...	21
<b>The Article</b> ...	23
" <b>Initial changes produced by</b> ...	23
<b>Gender, Rules for</b> ...	26
<b>Cases, Number of</b> ...	28
" <b>Rules for formation of the</b> ...	28

	Page.
First Declension ... ... ... ...	30
" Examples of vowel-changes ...	33
" Irregular Genitive Singular ..	34
" Irregular Nominative Plural ..	34
Second Declension ... ... ... ...	36
" Examples of vowel-changes ...	37
" Irregular Genitive Singular ..	39
" Irregular Nominative Plural ...	39
Third Declension ... ... ... ...	41
" Irregular Nominative Plural ...	44
Fourth Declension ... ... ... ...	45
" Irregular Nominative Plural ...	46
Fifth Declension ... ... ... ...	47
Heteroclite Nouns ... ... ... ...	51
Irregular Nouns ... ... ... ...	52
The Adjective ... ... ... ...	56
" First Declension ... ... ... ...	56
" Second Declension ... ... ... ...	59
" Third Declension ... ... ... ..	60
" Fourth Declension ... ... ... ..	60
" Aspiration of ... ... ... ...	61
" Eclipsis of ... ... ... ...	62
" Comparison of ... ... ... ...	63
" Irregular Comparison ... ...	68
Numeral Adjectives ... ... ... ...	69
" " Notes on ... ... ... ...	71
Personal Numerals ... ... ... ..	73
Possessive Adjectives ... ... ... ..	74
Demonstrative " ... ... ... ..	78
Indefinite " ... ... ... ..	79
Distributive " ... ... ... ..	82
Interrogative " ... ... ... ..	82
Intensifying Particles ... ... ... ..	66
Emphatico " ... ... ... ..	75

				Page.
Translation of "Some"	...	...	...	80
"Any"	...	...	...	81
<b>The Pronoun</b>				
Personal	...	...	...	83
Reflexive	...	...	...	84
Conjunctive and Disjunctive	...	...	...	85
Neuter Pronoun <i>εανό</i>	...	...	...	86
Prepositional	...	...	...	87
Relative	...	...	...	91
Demonstrative	...	...	...	93
Indefinite	...	...	...	94
Distributive	...	...	...	95
Interrogative	...	...	...	96
Reciprocal	...	...	...	97
<b>The Verb</b>				
Conjugations, Number of	...	...	...	98
" Three forms of	...	...	...	99
" Autonomous form of	...	...	...	100
Moods, Number of	...	...	...	102
Tenses, Number of	...	...	...	103
" Various forms of the	...	...	...	104
Principal Parts of a Verb	...	...	...	106
" Examples of	...	...	...	107
<b>First Conjugation</b>	...	...	...	108
" Notes on Moods and Tenses of	...	...	...	112
Rule for Aspiration of <i>τ</i> of the Past Participle	...	...	...	116
Participle of Necessity	...	...	...	116
Derivative Participles	...	...	...	117
Declension of Verbal Nouns	...	...	...	118
<b>Second Conjugation</b>	...	...	...	118
Verbs in <i>ις</i> and <i>υις</i>	...	...	...	119
Syncopated Verbs	...	...	...	120
Rules for formation of Verbal Noun	...	...	...	125
Irregular Verbs	...	...	...	127

	Page.
<b>Irregular Verbs, Absolute and Dependent forms of</b>	... 138
Cáim	... 127
Is	... 133
Beiri	... 136
Tábaigh	... 137
Abairt	... 140
Sáb	... 142
Fág	... 142
Deun	... 145
Feic	... 147
Cleap or Cluin	... 150
Táp	... 150
Téig (Téig)	... 152
Ít	... 154
Rígm	... 155
<b>Defective Verbs</b>	
Aí, Daí, feadair	... 156
Tábla, D'fóbaigh, feuvair	... 157
<b>Adverbs</b>	... 157
Interrogative Words	... 160
"Up and Down," &c.	... 160
"This side, that side," &c.	... 162
"Over"	... 162
North, South, East, West	... 163
<b>Compound or Phrase Adverbs</b>	... 164
Days of the Week	... 167
"Head-foremost"	... 167
"However"	... 168
The Adverb "The"	... 168
<b>Prepositions</b>	... 168
<b>Conjunctions</b>	... 169
Use of ná and ná go	... 170
Uses of mar	... 170
<b>Interjections</b>	... 171

<b>Word-Building</b>						
Prefixes	...	...	...	...	...	173
Affixes	...	...	...	...	...	176
Diminutives	...	...	...	...	...	178
"      in in	...	...	...	...	...	179
"      in an	...	...	...	...	...	179
"      in óg	...	...	...	...	...	180
Derivative Nouns	...	...	...	...	...	181
Compound Nouns	...	...	...	...	...	182
Derivative Adjectives	...	...	...	...	...	186
Verbs derived from Nouns	...	...	...	...	...	190
"      Adjectives	...	...	...	...	...	191
<b>Syntax of the Article</b>	...	...	...	...	...	192
Article used in Irish but not in English	...	...	...	...	...	193
<b>Syntax of the Noun</b>	...	...	...	...	...	196
Apposition	...	...	...	...	...	197
Collective Nouns	...	...	...	...	...	197
Personal Numerals	...	...	...	...	...	198
Personal Nouns	...	...	...	...	...	199
<b>Syntax of the Adjective</b>	...	...	...	...	...	201
Adjective used Attributively	...	...	...	...	...	202
"      Predicatively	...	...	...	...	...	204
Numeral Adjectives	...	...	...	...	...	205
Dual Number	...	...	...	...	...	209
Possessive Adjectives	...	...	...	...	...	211
<b>Syntax of the Pronoun</b>	...	...	...	...	...	213
Relative Pronoun	...	...	...	...	...	214
Translation of the Genitive case of the English	...	...	...	...	...	
Relative	...	...	...	...	...	216
<b>Syntax of the Verb</b>	...	...	...	...	...	218
Uses of the Subjunctive Mood	...	...	...	...	...	219
Relative form of the Verb	...	...	...	...	...	221
<b>Verbal Noun and its Functions</b>	...	...	...	...	...	224
How to translate the English Infinitive	...	...	...	...	...	226
Definition of a Definite Noun	...	...	...	...	...	285

	Page.
When to use the Verb <i>is</i> ... ... ...	236
Position of Words with <i>is</i> ... ... ...	240
Translation of the English Secondary Tenses ...	241
Prepositions after Verbs ... ... ...	243
Translation of the word "Not" ... ... ...	246
How to answer a question. Yes—No ... ... ...	246
<b>Syntax of the Preposition</b> ... ... ...	<b>249</b>
Translation of the Preposition "For" ... ...	256
"                          " "Of" ... ...	260
Uses of the Preposition ... ... ...	262
Specimens of Parsing ... ... ...	284
Idioms ... ... ...	289
Idiomatic Phrases ... ... ...	305
The Autonomous form of the Irish Verb ... ...	315
<b>Appendices</b>	
i. List of Nouns belonging to First Declension ...	325
ii. List of Feminine Nouns ending in a broad consonant belonging to Second Declension ... ... ...	327
iii. List of Nouns belonging to Third Declension ...	329
iv. List of Nouns belonging to Fifth Declension ...	333
v. List of Irregular Verbal Nouns ... ...	334
vi. List of Verbs of First Conjugation ... ...	336
vii. List of Syncopated Verbs ... ...	338
viii. Termination of the Regular Verbs in present-day usage ... ... ...	339
ix. Verb-System of Early Modern Irish ...	340
<b>Index</b> ... ... ...	<b>343</b>

## **PART I.—ORTHOGRAPHY.**

---

### **CHAPTER I.**

#### **The Letters.**

**1.** The Irish alphabet contains eighteen letters, five of which are vowels, the remaining thirteen are consonants.

The vowels are *á, e, í, o, u*; and the consonants are *b, c, d, f, g, h, l, m, n, p, r, t, v*.

**2.** The vowels are divided into two classes.

- (1) The broad vowels: *á, o, u.*
- (2) The slender vowels: *e, í.*

The vowels may be either long or short. The long vowels are marked by means of an acute accent (') placed over the vowel, as *món* (big) pronounced like the English word *more*; a short vowel has no accent, as *mol* (praise), pronounced like *mul* in the English word *mulberry*. Carefully distinguish between the terms "broad vowel" and "long vowel." The broad vowels (*á, o, u*) are not always long vowels, neither are the slender vowels (*e, í*) always short.

In writing Irish we must be careful to mark the accents on long vowels. See words distinguished by accent, par. 14.

## 3.

## Sounds of the Vowels.

The Irish vowel	is sounded like	in the words
á long	au	naught as in <i>báó</i> (baudh), boat
á short	o	not ,, <i>gáर</i> (gloss), green
é long	ae	Gaelic ,, <i>ché</i> (kír-aé), clay
é short	e	let ,, <i>te</i> (t'ye), hot
í	ee	feel ,, <i>máilín</i> (mawil-een), little bag
í	i	hit ,, <i>fír</i> (fir), men
ó	ó	note ,, <i>móř</i> (mōr), big, large
ó	ó, ū	dōne or mūch ,, <i>dóhar</i> (dhur-us), a door
ú	oo	tool ,, <i>gúún</i> (gloon), a knee
ú	u	bull or put ,, <i>úrra</i> (ursu), a door-jamb

A short vowel at the end of an Irish word is *always pronounced.*

## The Digraphs.

4. The following list gives the sounds of the digraphs in Modern Irish. The first five are always long and require no accent. The others are sometimes long and sometimes short, hence the accent ought not to be omitted.\*

\* Since but few words, and these well-known, have *eo* short it is not usual to write the accent on *eo* long.

ia is pronounced like ee-a as ȏia (dyee-a), God.

ua	,	oo-a	,	ȏuár (foo-ar), cold.
eu or éa	,	ae	,	ȏeuř (faer), grass.
ae	,	ae	,	ȏaete (lae-hě), days.
ao	,	ae	,	ȏaor (dhaer), dear.
eo	,	yó	,	ceot (k-yōl), music.
iu	,	ew	,	ȏiu (few), worthy.
ai	,	au+í	,	ȏáin (kau-ín), a tax.
éi	,	ae+í	,	ȏéim (lyae-ím), a leap.
ói	,	ó+í	,	ȏóin (mō-in), a bog.
úi	,	oo+í	,	ȏúil (soo-il), an eye.
ea	,	aa	,	ȏaipleán (kosh-laan*), a castle.]

io	,	ee	,	ȏior (feer), true.
ái	,	a	,	ȏair (thaish), damp.
ea	,	a	,	ȏeár (far), a man.
ei	,	e	,	ȏeile (el-ě), other.
ói	,	ú+í	,	ȏoíl (thú-il), a will.
io	,	i	,	ȏior (fiss), knowledge.
úi	,	i	,	ȏúise (ish-ge), water.
eo	,	ú	,	ȏeoč (d'yukh), a drink.
ái (= aíde)	,	ee	,	ȏatái (kō-thee), coats.

### The Trigraphs.

5. There are six trigraphs in Irish. They are pronounced as follows :—

aoi = ee      ȏaoi (see)=a wise man.

eoí = ó+í      ȏeoitín (d'rō-il-een)=a wren.

\* Also pronounced kosh-laun.

e <small>ə</small> ɪ	=	aa+i	cáipteáin (kosh-laain)=castles.
ɪ <small>ə</small> ɪ	=	eea+i	úair (lee-ih)=a physician.
oo <small>ə</small> ɪ	=	oo+i	fuair (foo-ir)=found.
ew <small>ə</small> ɪ	=	ew+i	cíuin (kew-in)=calm.

### The Consonants.

6. The consonants are usually divided into two classes.

(1) The liquids—l, m, n, ŋ.

(2) The mutes—b, c, t, p, ʃ, ʒ, r, tʃ.

The letter n is not given, for n is not usually recognised as an Irish letter. It can be used only as a sign of aspiration, or at the beginning of a word, to separate two vowel sounds.

Some grammarians divide the consonants into labials, dentals, palatals, gutturals, sibilants, &c., according to the organs employed in producing the sound.

7. Every Irish consonant has two natural sounds, according as it is *broad* or *slender*.

An Irish consonant is broad whenever it immediately precedes or follows a broad vowel (a, o, u). An Irish consonant is slender whenever it immediately precedes or follows a slender vowel (e, i).

8. The Irish consonants, when broad, have a much

\* Pronounced like ille in the French word fille.

† It cannot be properly represented by any English sound. It is somewhat like *oue* in the French word *ouest*.

‡ Other sounds will be treated of under the heading "Aspiration."

thicker sound than in English; e.g.  $\tau$  broad has nearly the sound of *th* in *thy*, i.e. *d+h*;  $\tau$  broad has nearly the sound of *th* in *threw*, &c. When slender the Irish consonants (except  $r$ ) have somewhat the same sound as in English; but when they are followed by a slender vowel, they are pronounced somewhat like the corresponding English consonant followed immediately by a *y*, e.g. *ceot* (music) is pronounced *k' yōl*; *beo* (alive)=*b'yō*.

It must not, however, be understood that there is a “*y* sound” in the Irish consonant. The peculiar sound of the Irish consonants when followed by a slender vowel is fairly well represented by the corresponding English consonant + an English “*y* sound.” In some parts of the country this “*y* sound” is not heard. The *y* is *only suggestive*, and is never heard as a distinct sound.

### Combination of the Consonants.

9. There are certain Irish consonants which, when they come together in the same word, do not coalesce, so that when they are uttered a very short obscure vowel sound is heard between them.

This generally occurs in the case of two liquids or a liquid and a mute. Thus *baib* (dumb) is pronounced *boll-ūv*; *teanb* (a child) is *lyan-ūv*; *doirb* (dark) is *dhur-ūchū*; *marb* (a market) is *mor-ūgu*.

The following combinations do not coalesce: *cn*, *lb*, *lS*, *lm*, *nb*, *nb*, *ns*, *nn*, *lm*, *nb*, *nm*, *nm*, *nc*, *nc*.

10. In some combinations, *one of the consonants is silent.*

vt is pronounced like tt

vn           ,           nn

vo           ,           nn

tn           ,           tt

Thus, *co<sub>1</sub>ta<sub>2</sub>o* (sleep) is pronounced *kull<sup>u</sup>*.

ceu<sub>1</sub>tna (same)   ,   kaen<sup>u</sup>.

grá<sub>1</sub>tna (ugly)   ,   graun-<sup>u</sup>.

áitne (beauty)   ,   aul-y<sup>e</sup>.

Notice the difference between *ng* and *gn*.

*long* (a ship) is pronounced *lung*.

*gnō* (work)   ,   g<sup>u</sup>n-ō.

11. Only three of the Irish consonants, viz. the liquids *t*, *n*, *p*, may be doubled. This doubling can take place only at the end or the middle of words, but never at the beginning. The double liquids have quite distinct sounds from the single, except in Munster, where, in some positions, double liquids influence vowels. This doubling at the end of a word does not denote shortness of the preceding vowel, as in English: in fact, it is quite the opposite; e. g. *ea* in *fealp<sup>u</sup>* (better) is longer than *ea* in *fealp* (a man).

In Irish there is no double consonant like the English *x*, which = *ks*.

#### Accent.

12. The only accent sign used in writing Irish is the acute accent placed over the long vowels, and over

the long sounds of those diphthongs, which may be sometimes short. This sign is not intended to mark the syllable on which the stress of the voice falls.

13. In simple words of two syllables the tonic accent is usually upon the first syllable, as *ógus* (óg-us), *and*; *úna* (oón-a), *Una*: but in derived words of two or more syllables the accented syllable varies in the different provinces.

In Munster the accent falls on the termination or second syllable; in Connaught it falls on the first syllable, or root; in Ulster the accent falls on the first syllable, as in Connaught, but the termination is unduly shortened. For instance, the word *cápan*, a path, is pronounced *kos-aún* in Munster, *kós-aun* in Connaught, and *kós-ăń* in Ulster.

### The Obscure Vowel Sounds.

Whenever a vowel has neither a tonic nor a written accent, it has so transient and indistinct a pronunciation that it is difficult to distinguish one broad or one slender vowel from another; hence in ancient writings we find vowels substituted for each other indiscriminately: *e.g.*, the word *rlánuigte*, *saved*, is frequently spelled *rlánaigte*, *rlánoigte*, *rlánuigti*.

### 14. Words distinguished by their accent.

*áit*, a place.

*áit*, funny, peculiar (what one likes or wishes).

*áp*, our; slaughter.

*ap*, on; says.

þær, death.	þær (or þor), palm of the hand.
cárf, a case.	cárf, turn.
ceawo (ceuo), a hundred.	ceawo, leave, permission
cóip, right.	cóip, a crime.
cóirte, a coach.	cóirte, a jury.
two, two.	two, to.
þán, a wandering.	þan, wait, stay.
þéaþ (þeup), grass.	þeaþ, a man.
þor, yet.	þor, a prop.
í, she, her.	í, in.
teáþ, clear, perceptible.	teáþ, the sea.
ton, food, provisions.	ton, a blackbird.
mála, a bag.	mála, an eyebrow.
méaþ (meup), a finger.	meaþ, quick, active.
min, fine.	min, meal.
ná, than; not ( <i>imperative</i> ).	ná, <i>the plural article</i> .
þor, a rose.	þor, flax-seed.
þál, a heel.	þál, filth, dirt.
þeán (reun), happy.	þeán, old.
þin, stretch.	þin, that.
þoláþ, comfort.	þoláþ, light.
þúl, ( <i>gen. plural of</i> þúl) eye.	þut, before ( <i>with verbs</i> ).
té, a person.	té, hot.

## CHAPTER II.

## Aspiration.

15. The word "aspiration" comes from the Latin verb "aspirare," to breathe; hence, when we say in Irish that a consonant is aspirated, we mean that the breath is not completely stopped in the formation of the consonant, but rather that the consonant sound is continuous.

Take, for example, the consonant *b*. To form this consonant sound the lips are pressed closely together for an instant, and the breath is forced out on separating the lips. Now, if we wish to get the sound of *b* aspirated (or *þ*), we must breathe the whole time whilst trying to form the sound of *b*; *i.e.* we must not close the lips entirely, and the resulting sound is like the English consonant *v*. Hence we say that the sound of *b* (in some positions) is *v*.

The Irish letter *c* corresponds very much to the English *k*, and the breathed sound of *k* corresponds to the sound of *c* (when broad). To sound the English *k*, we press the centre of the tongue against the palate, and cut off the breath completely for an instant. In pronouncing *c* (when broad), all we have to do is to try to pronounce the letter *k* without *pressing* the tongue against the palate. The word *lóc*, a lake, is pronounced somewhat like *luk*; but the tongue is not to touch the palate to form the *k*. The sound of *c* aspirated when slender (especially when initial) is very well represented by the sound of "h" in "humane."

The Irish *g* (ȝ) has always the hard sound of *g* in the English word "go." In pronouncing this word we press the back of the tongue against the back of the palate. Now, to pronounce ȝ (and also ɸ) when broad, we must breathe in forming the sound of *g*, *i.e.* we must keep the tongue almost flat in the mouth.

The various sounds of the aspirated consonants are not given, as they are dealt with very fully in the second part of the "O'Growney Series." It may be well to remark, however, that the sound of *p* is like the sound of the Irish *f*, not the English *f*. The Irish *f* is sounded without the aid of the teeth.

16. Aspiration is usually marked by placing a dot over the consonant aspirated—thus,  $\mathfrak{b}$ ,  $\mathfrak{c}$ ,  $\mathfrak{d}$ . However, it is sometimes marked by an  $n$  after the consonant to be aspirated. This is the method usually adopted when Irish is written or printed in English characters.

17. In writing Irish only nine of the consonants, viz.,  $b$ ,  $c$ ,  $v$ ,  $f$ ,  $g$ ,  $m$ ,  $p$ ,  $r$ , and  $t$ , are aspirated; but in the spoken language all the consonants are aspirated.

### The Aspiration of $t$ , $n$ , $p$ .

18. The aspiration of the three letters  $t$ ,  $n$ ,  $p$ , is not marked by any sign in writing, as is the aspiration of the other consonants ( $b$  or  $bh$ ); but yet they are aspirated in the spoken language. An example will best illustrate this point. The student has already learned that the word  $\mathfrak{teabhar}$ , a book, is pronounced  $lyou-ar$ .  $mo$ , my, aspirates an ordinary consonant, as  $mo\ \mathfrak{bó}$ , my cow; but it also aspirates  $t$ ,  $n$ ,  $p$ , for  $mo\ \mathfrak{teabhar}$ , my book, is pronounced  $m\ddot{e}\ low-ar$  (*i.e.* the sound of  $y$  after  $l$  disappears).

$\Delta\ \mathfrak{teabhar}$ , his book,	is pronounced	$\mathfrak{a}\ low-ar$ .
$\Delta\ \mathfrak{teabhar}$ , her book,	"	$\mathfrak{a}\ lyou-ar$ .
$\Delta\ \mathfrak{teabhar}$ , their book,	"	$\mathfrak{a}\ lyow-ar$ .
$\Delta\ neart$ , his strength,	"	$\mathfrak{a}\ narth$ .
$\Delta\ neart$ , her strength,	"	$\mathfrak{a}\ nyarth$ .
$\&c.$ , $\&c.$ .		

19. When  $t$  broad begins a word it has a much thicker sound than in English. In sounding the English  $t$  the point of the tongue touches the palate just above the teeth; but to get the thick sound of the Irish  $t$  we must press the tongue firmly against the upper teeth (or we may protrude it between the teeth). Now, when such an  $t$  is aspirated it loses this thick sound, and is pronounced just as the English  $t$ .

20. It is not easy to show by an example the aspirated sound of  $p$ ; however, it is aspirated in the spoken language, and a slightly softer sound is produced.

### Rules for Aspirations.

21. We give here only the principal rules. Others will be given as occasion will require.

(a). The possessive adjectives *mo*, *my*; *þo*, *thy*; and *á*, *his*, aspirate the first consonant of the following word, as *mo bó*, *my cow*; *þo māctaip*, *thy mother*; *á c̄apall*, *his horse*.

(b) The article aspirates a noun in the nominative and accusative feminine singular, and also in the genitive masculine singular unless the noun begins with *v*, *c*, or *r*; *an v̄ean*, *the woman*; *c̄a an f̄eoir ḡuit*, *the meat is salt*; *mac an f̄iþ*, *(the) son of the man*.

(c) In compound words the initial consonant of the second word is aspirated, except when the second word begins with *v* or *c*, and the first ends in one of the letters *v*, *n*, *c*, *t*, *r*. These five letters will be easily remembered, as they are the consonants of the word "*dental*s"; *rean-máctaip*, *a grandmother*; *c̄at-vápp*, *a helmet*; *teit-pinginn*, *a halfpenny*; but *rean-tuine*, *an old person*; *rean-teac*, *an old house*.

(d) The interjection *á*, the sign of the vocative case, causes aspiration in nouns of both genders and both numbers: *á f̄iþ*, *O man*; *á m̄ná*, *O women*; *á Seumair*, *O James*.

(e) An adjective is aspirated when it agrees with a feminine noun in the nominative or accusative sin-

gular, or with a masculine noun in the genitive singular, and in the dative and vocative singular of both genders; also in the nominative plural when the noun ends in a slender consonant: as *bó báin*, a white cow; *mac an fír móir*, (the) son of the big man; *ð'n mnaoi máit*, from the good woman; *tři capaill móra*, three big horses.

(f) When a noun is immediately followed by an indefinite\* noun in the genitive case, singular or plural, the initial of the noun in the genitive is usually subject to precisely the same rules as if it were the initial of an adjective: e. g. *ub cínce*, a hen-egg (lit. an egg of a hen); *ubhe cínce*, of a hen-egg; *cloc mne*, a stone of meal; *mín coisce*, oaten meal. The letters *o* and *t* are not aspirated after *o*, *n*, *t*, *l*, *r*; and *p* is often excepted, as the change in sound is so great.

(g) The initial of a verb is aspirated—(1) in the imperfect, the simple past, and the conditional, active voice; (2) after the particles *ní*, not; *má*, if; *maři*, as; and *put*, before; (3) after the simple relative particle, expressed or understood: *bí ré*, he was; *oo ſear ri*, she stood; *ní fuilim*, I am not; *ní béró ré*, he will not be; *an té bualtear* or *an té a bualtear*, he (or the person) who strikes; *oo bualteinn*, I would strike.

---

\*i.e. One not preceded by the definite article, possessive adj., &c.  
See par. 585.

(h) The initial of the word following **ba** or **buo** (the past tense and conditional of the verb **ir**) is usually aspirated.\*

**ba mhaist liom**, I liked or I would like.

**b' feann teir**; he preferred or would prefer.

(i) The simple prepositions (except **as**, **ar**, **te**, **san**, and **go**) aspirate the initials of the nouns immediately following them: **fa cloic**, under a stone; **tug re an teabhar oo Seumair**, he gave the book to James.

---

## CHAPTER III.

### Eclipsis.

22. Eclipsis is the term used to denote the suppression of the sounds of certain Irish consonants by prefixing others produced by the same organ of speech.

There is usually a great similarity between the eclipsing letter and the letter eclipsed: thus, **p** is eclipsed by **b**; **t** is eclipsed by **v**, &c. If the student pronounce the letters **p** and **b**, **t** and **v**, he will immediately notice the similarity above referred to. Thus **b** and **v** are like **p** and **t**, except that they are pronounced with greater stress of the breath, or, more correctly, with greater vibration of the vocal chords.

---

\* Except in N. Connaught and Ulster, where this rule applies only to **b**, **p**, **v**, and sometimes **f**.

23. Seven\* of the consonants can be eclipsed, viz. **b**, **c**, **v**, **f**, **g**, **p**, **t**; the others cannot. Each consonant has its own eclipsing letter, and it can be eclipsed by no other. The eclipsing letter is written immediately before the eclipsed letter, and is sometimes, though not usually in recent times, separated from it by a hyphen, as **m-báṛo** or **máṛo** (pronounced maurdh).

Formerly eclipsis was sometimes shown by doubling the eclipsed letter: thus, **aa** **ttáṛb**, their bull. Whenever a letter is eclipsed both should be retained in writing, although only one of them (the eclipsing one) is sounded.

24. It is much better not to consider the letter **r** as an eclipsable letter at all. **t** replaces it in certain positions, but in none of those positions (dative singular excepted) in which the other letters are eclipsed. In fact, **r** is often replaced by **t** when the previous word ends in **n**, as **an tṛūl**, the eye; **aon tṛat**, one heel; **rean t-Site**, old Sheelah; **burdean tṛuaṛg**, a crowd, &c. Some, however, maintain that **r** is really eclipsed in these cases, because its sound is suppressed, and that of another consonant substituted; but as the substitution of **t** follows the rules for aspiration rather than those for eclipsis, we prefer to class **r** with the non-eclipsable letters, **t**, **m**, **n**, **p**, **r**.

---

\*Eight is the number given in other grammars. They include the letter **r**.

25. **b** is eclipsed by **m**.

c	,	g.
ð	,	n.
r	,	þ.
s	,	n.
p	,	b.
t	,	d.

ଅମ୍ବାର୍ତ୍ତ (their poet) is pronounced a maurd.

ଅ ଶ୍ରୀପାତ୍ର (their horse)	,	a gôpâl.
ଅ ମୋହନ (our poem)	,	aur naun.
ଇ ବ୍ରଦ୍ଧି (in blood)	,	ă vwil.
ଅ ନେତ୍ରିତ୍ତା (their servant)	,	ang illû.
ଇ ଦ୍ରୋହ (in pain)	,	a baen.
ଅ ଭାତାଳମ୍ (their land)	,	a dhôl-ûv.

Although **n** is used as the eclipsing letter of **g**, the sound of **n** is not heard, but the simple consonant sound **ng**; therefore it would be more correct to say that **g** is eclipsed by **ng**.

### Rules for Eclipsis.

26. (a) The possessive adjectives plural—ଅପ୍ତ, our ; ତୁମ୍ହି, your ; and ଅତ୍, their—eclipse the initial consonant of the next word, as ଅପ୍ତ ଦେବେଶାରମା, our Lord ; ତୁମ୍ହି ଶ୍ରୀପାତ୍ର, your horse ; ଅମ୍ବାର୍ତ୍ତ, their boat.

(b) The article eclipses the initial consonant of the noun in the genitive plural (both genders) : ଲାମା ନା ବ୍ରେମ୍, (the) hands of the men.

(c) A simple preposition followed by the article

and a noun in the singular causes eclipsis\*: *tá ré an* scapall, he is on the horse; *táinig ré leir ar* bfeair, he came with the man.

(d) The numeral adjectives *reacht*, *ocht*, *naoi*, and *deic* (7, 8, 9, and 10), and their compounds, as 27, 28, 29, &c., cause eclipsis: *reacht mba*, seven cows; *ocht scaoilis*, eight sheep; *reacht b-piùr fidear*, twenty-seven men.

(e) The initial consonant of a verb is eclipsed after the particles *cá*, not; *an*, whether; *cá*, where; *nád*, whether . . . not or that . . . not; *go*, that; *muná*, unless; *oí*, if; and after the relative particle *a* when it is preceded by a preposition, or when it means "all that" or "what." The relative preceded by a preposition does not eclipse if the verb be past tense, except in the case of a very few verbs, which will be given later on: *an octúigeann tú*, do you understand? *nád bfuil ré tinn*, isn't he sick? *cá bfuil ré*, where is it? *oibarnt ré go octiocaib ré*, he said that he would come; *an feair as a bfuil an leabhar*,† the man who has the book.

### The Insertion of *n*.

27. (a) When a word begins with a vowel, the letter *n* is usually prefixed in all those cases in which a con-

\* In many places they prefer to aspirate in this case.

† In colloquial Irish this sentence would be, *an feair a bfuil an leabhar aige*, or *an feair go bfuil an leabhar aige*.

sonant would be eclipsed: *e.g.*, *ári n-apán laeteamhail*, our daily bread; *éuairí Óisín go thír na n-ós*, Oisin went to “the land of the young.”

The *n* is sometimes omitted when the previous word ends in *n*: as *ári an aonac*, or *ári an n-aonac*, at the fair.

(b) **Prepositions** (except *oo* and *oe*) **ending in a vowel prefix** *n* to the possessive adjectives *a*, his, her, or their; and *ári*, our; *le n-a máthair*, with his mother; *ó n-ári oclí*, from our country.

### The Insertion of *c*.

28. (a) The article prefixes *c* to a masculine noun beginning with a vowel in the nominative and accusative singular: as *an c-aclair*, the father.

(b) If a noun begins with *r* followed by a vowel, or by *t*, *n*, or *p*, the *r* is replaced by *c* after the article in the nom. and acc. feminine sing. and the genitive masculine, and sometimes in the dative singular of both genders, as *an crúit*, the eye; *teac an cragairt*, (the) house of the priest, *i.e.*; the priest's house; *cáriod ag teacat ó'n créit*, they are coming from the hunt.

(c) This replacing of *r* by *c* occurs after the words *aon*, one; *rean*, old; and other words ending in *n*, as *aon créit*, *aonáin*, one hunt.

### The Insertion of *n*.

29. The following is a pretty general rule for the insertion of *n* before vowels:—

“ Particles which neither aspirate nor eclipse, and which end in a vowel, prefix *n* to words beginning with a vowel. Such is the case with the following:—*te*, with; *a*, her; *so*, to; *taŋa*, second; *re*, six; *tŋi*, three; *na*, the (in the nom., acc., and dative plural, also in the gen. singular feminine); *so* before adverbs; the ordinal adjectives ending in *mæð*, &c.”

—*Gaelic Journal*.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

### Attenuation and Broadening.

30. *Attenuation* is the process of making a broad consonant slender. This is usually done by placing an *i* immediately *before* the broad consonant, or an *e* *after* it. Thus if we want to make the *p* of *mōp* (big), slender, we place an *i* before the *p*; thus *mōip*. If we wish to make the *p* of *peaŋ* (the termination of the 1st person singular future) slender, we write *peaŋ*, &c.

31. *Broadening* is the process of making a slender consonant broad. This is often done by placing a *u* immediately before the slender consonant, or an *a* after it; thus the verbal noun of derived verbs ending in *ɪs* is formed by adding *av*: before adding the *av* the *s* must be made broad; this is done by inserting

a u; minis, explain; minisgao, explanation. If we want to make the r of rió (the termination of 3rd singular future) broad, we must write ráio. Buailrió ré, he will strike; meallráio ré, he will deceive.

Whenever a slender consonant is preceded by an i which forms part of a diphthong or a triphthong, the consonant is usually made broad by dropping the i. Thus to broaden the t in buail, or the n in gom, we drop the i and the we get buat and gon. The verbal nouns of buail and gom are buataó and gonáó.

---

## CHAPTER V.

Caoi le caoi agus teatan le teatan;

or,

Slender with slender and broad with broad.

32. When a single consonant, or two consonants which easily blend together, come between two vowels, both the vowels must be slender or both must be broad.

This is a general rule of Irish phonetics. It has already been stated that a consonant is broad when beside a broad vowel, and slender when beside a slender vowel; and also that the sounds of the consonants vary according as they are broad or slender: hence if we try to pronounce a word like feáin, the p, being beside the slender vowel i, should get its slender sound; but being also beside the broad vowel a, the p should be broad. But a consonant cannot be slender and broad at the same time; hence, such spelling as feapín, málín, and éanín, does not represent the correct sounds of the words, and,

therefore, the device adopted in writing Irish is to have both the vowels slender or both broad; e.g., *fiúín*, *máilín*, *éinín*.

This law of phonetics is not a mere *spelling* rule. If it were, such spelling as *feárlaoin*, *málaon*, *éanaon*, would be correct. But no such spelling is used, because it does not represent the sounds of the words. The *ear* and not the *eye* must be the guide in the observance of the rule "*caol le caol* γ *leatán le leatán*."

Two consonants may come together, one naturally broad and the other naturally slender. When this happens, Irish speakers, as a general rule, give the consonants their *natural* sounds, i.e., they keep the broad consonant broad, and the slender one slender. For instance, the *m* of *com* is naturally broad, and the *t* of *tion* is naturally slender. In the word *coimlín* (*fulfil*), the first syllable is always pronounced broad, although the word is usually written *coimlín*. This is an instance of the abuse of the rule *caol le caol*. There are many words in which a single consonant may have a slender vowel at one side, and a broad vowel at the other; e.g., *apéipi* (*last night*), *aníor* (*up*), *apuam* (*ever*), *apír* (*again*), etc.

Although the rule *caol le caol* had been much abused in modern spelling, in deference to modern usage we have retained the ordinary spelling of the words.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

### Syncope.

33. Whenever, in a word of two or more syllables an unaccented vowel or digraph occurs in the last syllable between a liquid (*t*, *m*, *n*, *ŋ*) and any other consonant, or between two liquids, the unaccented vowel or digraph is elided whenever the word is lengthened by a grammatical inflection beginning with a vowel. This elision of one or more unaccented

vowels from the body of an Irish word is called *syncope*; and when the vowels have been elided the word is said to be *syncopated*.

34. The only difficulty in syncope is that it often involves slight changes in the other vowels of the syncopated word, in accordance with the rule *caolt te caol*,

35. The following examples will fully exemplify the method of syncopating words.

(a) *Nouns.*

The genitive singular of—

maiorin (morning)	is maiorne	not maiorne
obair (work)	„ oibhe	„ obairie
cairnais (a rock)	„ cairipse	„ cairnais
ringin	„ ringne	„ ringinne
ringin	„ ringne	„ ringinne
caethair (help)	„ caethra	„ caethra
catair (a city)	„ catrae	„ catrae
tarair (a flame)	„ tarrae	„ tarrae
olann (wool)	„ olra	„ olanna
uirdean (a company)	„ uirde	„ uirde
truiscean (a palace)	„ truisne	„ truisine

(b) *Adjectives.*

The genitive singular feminine of—

ꝑaiðbír (rich)	is ꝑaiðbíre	not ꝑaiðbíre
ꝑlaíteamhail (princely)	,, ꝑlaíteamhla	,, ꝑlaíteamhala
áluinn (beautiful)	,, áilne	,, áluinne
aoiðinn (pleasant)	,, aoiðne	,, aoiðinne
uafat (noble)	,, uafite	,, uafaite

(c) *Verbs.*

Root.	Pres. Indicative.		
coðaíl	coðaílam, I sleep,	not	coðaílim.
riuðaíl	riuðaílam, I walk,	,,	riuðaílim.
inntír	inntírim, I tell,	,,	inntírim.
abðaíl	abðaílam, I say,	,,	abðaílim.
laðaíl	laðaílam, I speak,	,,	laðaílim.

The same contraction takes place in these and like verbs in all the finite tenses except the future and conditional (*old* forms). See par. 298.

A thorongh knowledge of when and how Syncope takes place will obviate many difficulties

**PART II.—ETYMOLOGY.**

36. There are nine parts of speech in Irish corresponding exactly to those in English.

**CHAPTER I.****The Article.**

37. In Irish there is only one article, *an*, which corresponds to the English definite article, “the.”

There is no indefinite article, so that *capall* means either “horse” or “a horse.”

38. In all cases of the singular number the article has the form *an*, except in the genitive feminine, when it becomes *na*.

In all the cases of the plural it is *na*.

39. The article *an* had formerly an initial *r*. This *r* reappears after the following prepositions, *i*, *in*, or *ann*, *in*; *go*, *to*; *te*, *with*; *tré*, *through*. Although this *r* really belongs to the article, still it is usually written as part of the preposition; as *inr an teabhar*, *in the book*; *teir an bhean*, *with the man*.

**INITIAL CHANGES PRODUCED BY  
THE ARTICLE.**

**Singular.**

40. (a) If a noun begins with an aspirable consonant (except *t*, *c*, and *r*),\* it is aspirated by the article

\* The letters *v*, *c*, and *r* are aspirable in the singular, but not usually by the article

in the nominative and accusative feminine and in the genitive masculine, as *an bò*, the cow; *an bearn*, the woman; *mac an fìr*, (the) son of the man; *ceann an capaill*, the horse's head (or the head of the horse).

(b) If a noun begins with *r* followed by a vowel, or by *t*, *n*, *p*, the *r* is replaced by *t*, in the nominative and accusative feminine and genitive masculine, and sometimes in the dative of both genders: *an tràil*, the heel; *an tráit*, the eye; *teac an tràsairt*, the house of the priest; *mac an tràoir*, the son of the artizan; *do'n tràsairt*, to the priest; *an tráleib*, on the mountain.

Strictly speaking, it is only in the dat. fem. that the *r* is replaced by *t*, but custom permits it in the masculine.

(c) If a noun begins with a vowel, the article prefixes *t* to the nominative and accusative masculine, and *n* to the genitive feminine, as *an t-atair*, the father; *an t-uisce*, the water; *an t-eun*, the bird; *an t-uam*, the lamb; *bàrr na h-uibe*, the top of the egg; *fuact na h-aimriù*, the coldness of the weather.

(d) When the noun begins with an eclipsable consonant (except *v* and *t*), the article generally eclipses when it is preceded by a preposition, as *an gcnoc*, on the hill; *o'n bfeam*, from the man. After the prepositions\* *vo* and *ve* aspiration takes place, not

\* For the effects of *g* and the article, see Syntax, par. 606 (b).

eclipsis, as *cus ré an t-airgead do'n feap*, he gave the money to the man; *cuso de'n feap*, some of the grass.

(e) No change is produced by the article in the singular if the noun begins with *v*, *n*, *t*, *t*, *r* (followed by a mute), or *p*. In *Munster* *v* and *t* are often eclipsed in the dative.

### Plural.

(f) If a noun begins with an eclipsable consonant the article eclipses it in the genitive plural, as *a bœan na trí mbœ*, O woman of (the) three cows; *Sliað na mbœn*, "the mountain of the women."

(g) If the noun begins with a vowel the article prefixes *n* to the genitive plural and *n* to the nom., the acc., and dative plural, as *tuac na n-ub*, the price of the eggs; *na n-árasil*, the asses; *ó na n-áritib* *reo*, from these places.

(h) The letter *r* is never replaced by *t* in the plural number under the influence of the article.

---

## CHAPTER II.

### The Noun.

#### I. GENDER.

41. There are only two genders in Irish, the masculine and the feminine.

The gender of most Irish nouns may be learned by the application of a few general rules.

## MASCULINE NOUNS.

42. (a) Names of males are masculine: as *pearl*, a man; *præit*, a prince; *atæir*, a father; *coiteac*, a cock.

(b) The names of occupations, offices, &c., peculiar to men, are masculine: as *ollam*, a doctor; *pile*, a poet; *baðro*, a bard; *þreitteam*, a judge; *raisgrorlunir*, a soldier.

(c) Personal agents ending in *orl*, *orlæ*, *urðe* (or *arðe*, *orðe*), or *ac* are masculine: as *rgeulurðe*, a story-teller; *baðorlir*, a boatman.

(d) Diminutives ending in *an*, and all abstract nouns ending in *ar* or *ear*, are masculine—*e.g.*:

*áþrðan*, a hillock.                    *maitear*, goodness.

(e) The diminutives ending in *in* are usually said to be of the same gender as the noun from which they are derived. Notwithstanding this rule they seem to be all masculine. *Caitlin*, a girl, is masculine,\* i. e. it suffers the same initial changes as a masculine noun, *but the pronoun referring to it is feminine*. She is a fine girl, *þr bæðs an caitlin i* (not *e*).

(f) Many nouns which end in a consonant or two consonants preceded by a broad vowel are masculine: as *baðl*, a limb; *luac*, a price; *crann*, a tree, &c.

*Exceptions*:—(1) All words of two or more syllables ending in *act* or *os*.

---

\* Do not confound sex with gender. Gender is decided by grammatical usage only.

(2) A large number of nouns ending in a broad consonant are feminine. A very full list of commonly used feminine nouns ending in a broad consonant will be found in Appendix II.

### FEMININE NOUNS.

43. (a) Names of females and designations of females are feminine: *bean*, a woman; *cearc*, a hen; *máthair*, a mother; *ingeán*, a daughter.

(b) The names of countries and rivers are feminine: as *Éire*, Ireland; *an Lífe*, the Liffey; *an Bhealbha*, the Barrow.

(c) Words of two or more syllables ending in *act* or in *os* are feminine: as *fuileodh*, a lark; *óriodh*, a briar; *milreacht*, sweetness; *teannacht*, new-milk.

(d) All abstract nouns formed from the genitive singular feminine of adjectives are feminine: as *áitne*, height—from *áit*, high; *áitne*, beauty—from *áitenn*, beautiful; *taillte*, blindness—from *taill*, blind.

(e) Nouns ending in a consonant or two consonants preceded by a slender vowel, are feminine: as *cír*, country; *onóir*, honour; *uair*, an hour; *ráit*, an eye.

*Exceptions*:—(1) Personal nouns ending in *oir*. (2) Diminutives in *ín*. (3) Names of males, as *atair*, a father; *buascailt*, a boy. (4) Also the following nouns:—*buair*, a victory; *óriam*, the back; *ainm*,\* a name; *gréim*, a piece; *geit*, a fright, a start; and *roscóir*, dictionary, vocabulary.

---

\* *Ainm* is feminine in S. Munster.

## II. CASE.

**44.** In Irish there are five cases—the Nominative, Accusative, Genitive, Dative, and Vocative.

The Nominative case in Irish corresponds to the English nominative when the subject of a verb.

The Accusative corresponds to the English objective case when governed by a transitive verb. The accusative case of every noun in modern Irish has the same form as the nominative, and suffers the same initial changes as regards aspiration and eclipsis.

The Genitive case corresponds to the English possessive case. English nouns in the possessive case or in the objective case, preceded by the preposition "of," are usually translated into Irish by the genitive case.

The Dative case is the case governed by prepositions.

The Vocative corresponds to the English nominative of address. It is always used in addressing a person or persons. It is preceded by the sign *a*, although "O" may not appear before the English word; but this *a* is not usually pronounced before a vowel or *f*.

## RULES FOR THE FORMATION OF THE CASES.

**N.B.**—These rules apply to all the declensions.

**45.** The Nominative case singular is always the simple form of the noun.

46. The Dative case singular is the same as the nominative singular, except (1) in the 2nd declension, when the noun ends in a broad consonant; (2) in most of the nouns of the 5th declension.

47. The Vocative case singular is always the same as the nominative singular, except in the 1st declension, in which it is like the genitive singular.

48. Whenever the nominative plural is formed by the addition of *te*, *ta*, *anna*, *ācā*, *i* or *ī*, &c., it is called a **strong nominative plural**. Strong plurals are usually found with nouns whose nominative singular ends in a liquid.

Those ending in *t* or *n* generally take *ta* or *te*.

”	<i>m</i> or <i>r</i>	”	<i>anna</i> .
”	<i>r</i>	”	<i>ācā</i> .

### The Genitive Plural.

49. (1) The genitive plural in the 1st, 2nd, and 3rd declensions is like the nominative singular, except strong plurals, and a few nouns which drop the *i* of the nominative singular, as *rūt*, an eye, gen. pl. *rūt*.

(2) In the 4th declension, and in the case of nearly all strong plurals, the genitive plural is like the nominative plural.

(3) In the 5th declension the genitive plural is like the genitive singular.

50. **The Dative Plural.**

- (1) When the nominative plural ends in *a* or a consonant, the dative plural ends in *ai**b***.
- (2) When the nominative plural ends in *e*, the dative plural is formed by changing the *e* into *ib*.
- (3) When the nominative plural ends in *i*, the dative plural is formed by adding *b*.

The termination of the dative plural is not always used in the spoken language.

**Vocative Plural.**

51. (1) When the dative plural ends in *ai**b***, the vocative plural is formed by dropping the *ib* of the dative.
- (2) In all other cases it is like the nominative plural.

**III. The Declensions.**

52. The number of declensions is not quite settled: it is very much a matter of convenience. Five is the number usually reckoned.

The declensions are known by the inflection of the genitive singular.

**THE FIRST DECLENSION.**

53. All the nouns of the first declension are masculine, and end in a broad consonant.

All masculine nouns ending in a broad consonant *are not* of the first declension.

54. The genitive singular is formed by attenuating the nominative. In most nouns of the 1st declension this is done by simply placing an *ı* after the last broad vowel of the nominative.

## Example.

55.

ταօρ, a steward.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

Nom. & Acc.	ταօր	ταօιρ
Gen.	ταօιρ	ταօր
Dat.	ταօρ	ταօραιο
Voc.	α ταօιρ	α ταօρα

56. In words of more than one syllable, if the nominative ends in *αc* or *eac*, the genitive singular is formed by changing *αc* or *eac* into *αις* or *ις* respectively. With a few exceptions, the nominative plural of these nouns is like the genitive singular. The other cases are quite regular.

In monosyllables *c* is not changed into *ς*; as θρυαc, a brink, gen. θρυαιc.

N.B.—In all the declensions in words of more than one syllable *αc* and *eac*, when attenuated, become *αις* and *ις*; and *αις* and *ις* when made broad become *αc* and *eac*. See dat. pl. of *ταριcαc* and *coiteac*.

## Examples.

57.

ταριcαc, a horseman.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

Nom. & Acc.	ταριcαc	ταριcαις
Gen.	ταριcαις	ταριcαc
Dat.	ταριcαc	ταριcαcαιο
Voc.	α ταριcαις	α ταριcαcα

N.B.—The majority of nouns in *αc* belonging to this declension are declined like *ταριcαc*.

58. *ualač*, a load, burden.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>ualač</i>	<i>ualačiš</i>
Gen.	<i>ualačiš</i>	<i>ualač</i>
Dat.	<i>ualač</i>	<i>ualačišiš</i>
Voc.	<i>Δ ualačiš</i>	<i>Δ ualačiš</i>

*mułlač*, a summit; *eυołač*, cloth; *bealač*, a path, a way; *ɔplač*, an inch; and *Δonač*, a fair, are declined like *ualač*. *Δonač* has nom. pl. *Δonačiš* or *Δontačiš*.

59. *coileač*. a cock.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>coileač</i>	<i>coileiš</i>
Gen.	<i>coileiš</i>	<i>coileač</i>
Dat.	<i>coileač</i>	<i>coileačišiš</i>
Voc.	<i>Δ coileiš</i>	<i>Δ coileača</i>

60. Besides the above simple method of forming the genitive singular of most nouns of this declension, there are also the following modifications of the vowels of the nominative singular:—

Change *eυ* or *ea* in nom. sing. into *ei* in gen. sing.

„ 14	„	„	ei	„
„ o (short)	„	„	u1	„
10 or ea	„ usually	„	1	„

All the other cases of these nouns are formed in accordance with the rules given above.

## Examples of Vowel-changes in Genitive Singular.

61. eun, a bird.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	eun	éin
Gen.	éin	eun
Dat.	eun	eunai <b>is</b>
Voc.	ə éin	ə euna

62. fea**r**, a man.

Nom. & Acc.	fea <b>r</b>	fi <b>r</b>
Gen.	fi <b>r</b>	fea <b>r</b>
Dat.	fea <b>r</b>	fea <b>r</b> ai <b>s</b>
Voc.	ə fi <b>r</b>	ə fea <b>r</b> a

N.B.—The gen. of oileán in island is oileáin; of  
fea**r**, grass, fi**r**; and of fea**r**, a man, fi**r**.

63. cnoc, a hill.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cnoc	cnuic
Gen.	cnuic	cnoc
Dat.	cnoc	cnocai <b>s</b>
Voc.	ə cnuic	ə cnoca

64. The following nouns change ea into ei in genitive singular:—leán**b**, a child; neárt, strength; cneárt, skin; and ceárt, right, justice. (Cnúf and círf are sometimes found as the genitives of cneárt and ceárt).

## Irregular Genitive Singular.

mac, a son,	has	genitive	mic
bíad, food,	„	„	bíó
riam, a track,	„	„	riam
riam, a bridle,	„	„	riam
Briam, Bernard, Brian	„	„	Briam

Peas. a person; and éinne, aonne (or aonneadh), anybody, are indeclinable.

65. Some nouns of this declension form their nominative plural by adding e.

NOUN.	GENITIVE SING.	NOM. PLURAL.
aonadh, a fair	aonadis	{ aontaise { aonaise
doirír, a door	doirair	doiríe
éigear, a learned man	éigir	éigre
aingeal, an angel	aingil	aingle
bóthar, a road	bóthair	bóthre
matríd or (matró), a dog	matríd	matrídhe
rlátharó, a chain	rlátharó	rlátharó
marcáró, a market	marcáró	marcáró

66. The following nouns take a in nominative plural:—peann, a pen; reot, a jewel; rlán, a surety; cneárf, skin; meacan, a carrot or parsnip; teor, a tear; caor, a berry; rmeur, a blackberry; uball, an apple (pl. ubla); focail (pl. focail or focla); fiac,\* a debt (fiac, pl. féic or féig, a raven); rseul, news; and brial, a brink.

67. The following take ta, in nom. pl.:—reot, a sail; ceot, music; neut, a cloud; rseul, a story; coisad,

\* This word is usually used in the plural; as ní fuil aon fiaca oírm, I am not in debt.

war (pl. *cōstā*\*) ; *cuan*, a harbour ; *vūn*, a fort (pl. *vūntā* and *vūna*) ; *ceuo*, a hundred† ; *tion*, a net ; *ceāp* a trunk of a tree (pl. *ceāpta*) ; *mūr* (pl. *mūrtā*), a wall.

68. Other nominative plurals—*cīlīp*, a board, a table, makes *cīlīp* or *cīlīpācā* ; *tobāp*, a well, makes *tobāp* or *tobīpācā*, *tobāpēlācā* or *tobīpēlācā* : *rluaſ*, a crowd, makes *rluaſtē*.

69. Many nouns of this declension have two or more forms in the nominative plural. The regular plural is the better one, though the others are also used. The following are a few examples of such nouns :—*feāp*, a man (pl. *fiſ*, *feāpā*) ; *māc*, a son (pl. *mīc*, *mācā*) ; *teābāp*, a book (*teābāp*, *teābīpā*) ; *āpīm*, an army (pl. *āpīm*, *āpīma*) ; *carāt*, a horse (pl. *carātū*, *carītē*).

70. The termination *-rād* has a collective, not a plural force; just like *ry* in the English words *cavalry*, *infantry*, etc. This termination was formerly *neuter*, but now it is masculine or feminine; the genitive masculine being *-rādō*, the genitive feminine *-rādōe*. Hence *laocrād*, *a band of warriors*, *mācrād*, *a company of youths*, *eaſrād*, *a number of steeds (cavalry)*, are not really plurals of *laoc*, *māc*, and *eaſ*, but collective nouns formed from them. Likewise *ēantāt*, (spoken form, *ēantātē*) is a collective noun meaning *a flock of birds*, or *birds in general*, and it is not really the plural of *ēan*. However, *laocrād* and *ēantāt* are now used as plurals.

Appendix I. gives a list of nouns belonging to this declension.

\* *cōgarōe* is also used.

† When used as a noun.

## THE SECOND DECLENSION.

71. All nouns of the 2nd declension are feminine.\* They all end in consonants, but the consonants may be either broad or slender.

72. The **genitive singular** is formed by adding e, (if the last vowel of the nominative be broad it must be attenuated); and if the last consonant be c it is changed into g in the genitive (except in words of one syllable).

73. The **dative singular** is got by dropping the final e of the genitive.

74. The **nominative plural** is formed by adding a or e (a, if final consonant be broad) to the nom. sing.

## Examples.

75. *lil*, a lily.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>lil</i>	<i>lile</i>
Gen.	<i>lite</i>	<i>lit</i>
Dat.	<i>lit</i>	<i>litib</i>
Voc.	<i>a lit</i>	<i>a lile</i>

76. *cor*, a foot† or a leg.

Nom. & Acc.	<i>cor</i>	<i>cora</i>
Gen.	<i>core</i>	<i>cor</i>
Dat.	<i>cor</i>	<i>corai</i>
Voc.	<i>a cor</i>	<i>a cora</i>

\* *Tead* and *tria*, two masculine nouns, are sometimes given with the second declension. We give them as irregular nouns (par. 132).

† A foot in measurement is *trōizē*, pl. *trōizē*.

77.                   **cailleac**, a hag.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cailleac	cailleaca
Gen.	caillige	cailleac
Dat.	caillig	cailleacaib
Voc.	a cailleac	a cailleaca

78. Like nouns of 1st declension, the vowels of the nom. sing. are sometimes changed when the final consonant is attenuated in the genitive singular.

The following are the chief changes:—

Change *o* in the nom. sing. into *ı* in the gen. sing

„ eu	„	„ éi	„
„ ıa	„	„ éi	„
„ o (short) sometimes	„	„ uı	„

In words of one syllable change *ea* into *ei* (but *ceapc*, a hen, becomes *cıpce*); in words of more than one syllable change *ea* into *i*.

79.                   **beac**, a bee.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	beac	beaca
Gen.	beice	beac
Dat.	beic	beacaib
Voc.	a beac	a beaca

80.                   **geus**, a branch.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	geus	geus
Gen.	geuse	geus
Dat.	geis	geusaiib
Voc.	a geus	a geus

81. *Σπιάν, a sun.*

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	Σπιάν	Σπιάνα, Σπιάντα
Gen.	Σπέινε	Σπιάν
Dat.	Σπέιν	Σπιάναιδ
Voc.	Α Σπιάν	Α Σπιάνα

82. *Ιονσ, a ship.*

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	Ιονσ	Ιονσα
Gen.	Ιονιγε	Ιονσ
Dat.	Ιονις	Ιονσαιδ
Voc.	Α Ιονσ	Α Ιονσα

83. *Φρευμ, \* a root.*

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	Φρευμ	Φρευμά (or Φρευμάδα)
Gen.	Φρέιμε	Φρευμ (Φρευμάδα)
Dat.	Φρέιμ	Φρευμάιδ (Φρευμάδαιδ)
Voc.	Α Φρευμ	Α Φρευμά (Α Φρευμάδα)

84. *Λίτ, a place.*

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	Λίτ	Λίτε, Λίτελλα or Λίτελδα
Gen.	Λίτε	Λίτ, Λίτελλα „, Λίτελδα
Dat.	Λίτ	Λίτιδ, Λίτελλαιδ, Λίτελδαιδ
Voc.	Α Λίτ	Α Λίτε, Λίτελλα, Λίτελδα

The above are two examples of nouns with strong nominative plural (see par. 48).

## 85. In forming the genitive, nouns are sometimes

\*Also spelled *φρευμ* in Munster.

syncopated, as *burðean*, a company, gen. *burðone* (see pars. 33, 35); *þurðean*, a palace, gen. sing. *þurðone*.\*

### 86. Irregular Genitives Singular.

<i>clann</i> , a clan, children, makes	<i>clóinne</i> , <i>clainne</i> ,	pl. <i>clanna</i>
<i>deoc</i> , a drink,		<i>deoca</i>
<i>rsian</i> , a knife,	<i>rsine</i> ,	<i>rsedna</i>
<i>þmatan</i> , a (solemn) word,	<i>þreitþe</i> ,	<i>þmatra</i>
<i>blátaç</i> , buttermilk,	<i>bláitçet</i>	
<i>laçac</i> , mud, mire,	<i>laitçe</i> †	
<i>ðaðaç</i> , a vat,	<i>ðaðiðe</i>	<i>ðaðaca</i>
<i>aðair</i> , a face,	<i>aigte</i>	<i>aigte</i>

87. Many nouns of this declension form their nominative plural in *anna* or *açā*. The final *a* of these terminations *may* be dropped in the genitive plural.

#### NOM. SING.

<i>cúir</i> , a cause
<i>luib</i> , an herb
<i>veit</i> , a lathe
<i>gluaïr</i> , a contrivance
<i>béim</i> , a stroke
<i>ðuaðir</i> , a prize, reward
<i>léim</i> , a leap
<i>réim</i> , a course, & voyage
<i>áit</i> , a place
<i>luç</i> , a mouse
<i>rgoïl</i> , a school

#### NOM. PL.

<i>cúiréanna</i>
<i>luibeanna</i>
<i>veileanna</i>
<i>gluaïréanna</i>
<i>béimeanna</i>
<i>ðuaðréanna</i>
<i>léimeanna</i>
<i>réimeanna</i>
<i>áite, áiteanna, áiteaca</i>
<i>luç, luçanna</i> [teaca]
<i>rgoïléanna (rgoïta), rgoïl-</i>

\* Note the dative singular of these nouns, *burðin* and *þurðin*.

†Also *blátaçge*.

†Also *laçacge*.

NOM. SING.	NOM. PL.
céim, a step	céimeanna
fuaim, a sound	fuamanna
uair, an hour, time	uaire, uaireanna, uaireannta
gráid, a street	gráid, gráideanna, gráideasca
páirc, a field	páirce, páirceanna
feir, a festival	feireanna

### 88. Nouns that take *āca* in nominative plural—

οβαιρ, a work	οιδρеаćа
οράιο, an oration	οрाईдеаćа
ριατ, a rod	ρиата, ρиатада
λιτιη, a letter	лите, лиtreада
υδ, an egg	ииде, иидеада
παισιη, a prayer	пайореада
αιсію, a disease	аicіюдеаćа, аicію
сіумайр, an edge	сiумiнайреада
коicтию, a fortnight	коicтиюдеаćа, коicтиюри
τριαιл, a sheath, a scabbard	триаилада
τеас, a flag, a flat stone	тeaca, тeасада, тeаснада

89. The following take *te*, *te*, or *ta* in the nominative plural; *to* may be added in the genitive plural:—  
*coitt\**, a wood; *tūip*, a pillar, a prop; *tip*, a country (pl. *tiopta*); *agairō*, face (pl. *aiſte*); *rpeup*, a sky; *rpeupta*.

90. Sometimes when the last vowel of the nominative singular is preceded by a broad vowel, the

\* *Coit* is also 5th declension. See Heteroclite nouns, par. 131.

genitive plural is formed by dropping the *i*, as *rūt*, an eye, gen. pl. *rūt*; *ruām*, a sound, gen. pl. *ruām*, &c.

For a list of nouns ending in a broad consonant belonging to this declension, see Appendix II.

### THIRD DECLENSION.

91. The 3rd declension includes (1) personal nouns ending in *ōiñ* (all masculine), (2) derived nouns in *āct* or *āctō* (feminine), (3) other nouns ending in consonants which are, as a rule, masculine or feminine according as they end in broad or slender consonants.

92. The **genitive singular** is formed by adding *ā*. If the last vowel of the nominative be *i* preceded by a broad vowel, the *i* is usually dropped in the gen., as *toit*, a will, gen. *tōtā*.

93. The **nominative plural** is usually the same as the genitive singular; but personal nouns ending in *ōiñ* add *i* or *īōe* to the nominative singular.

94. Most of the derived nouns in *āct*, being abstract in meaning, do not admit of a plural. *Mallāct*, a curse, and a few others have plurals. *ruāct*, cold, although an abstract noun in *āct*, is masculine.

95. The vowels of the nominative often undergo a change in the formation of the genitive singular. These changes are just the reverse of the vowel changes of the 1st and 2nd declensions (see pars. 60 and 78).

Change *eɪ*, *i* or *ɪo* (short) in nom. into *ea* in the genitive

„	u „ ui „	„	„	o „	„
„	éi		„	éa	„

### Examples.

96. cnáṁ,\* a bone.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cnáṁ	cnáma
Gen.	cnáma	cnáṁ
Dat.	cnáṁ	cnámais
Voc.	á cnáṁ	á cnáma

97. ríon, wine.

Nom. & Acc.	ríon	ríona, ríonta
Gen.	ríona	ríon
Dat.	ríon	ríonais
Voc.	á ríon	á ríona

98. cneára, a belt, a girdle.

Nom. & Acc.	cneára	cneára
Gen.	cneára	cneára
Dat.	cneára	cneárais
Voc.	á cneára	á cneára

99. feoīl, flesh, meat.

Nom. & Acc.	feoīl	feoīla
Gen.	feoīla	feoīl
Dat.	feoīl	feoīlais
Voc.	á feoīl	á feoīla

\*Also spelled cnáṁ in nom. sing.

## 100. θάνοιρ, a boatman.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	θάνοιρ	θάνοιρι (θάνοιριθε)
Gen.	θάνορια	θάνοιρ, θάνοιρι
Dat.	θάνοιρι	θάνοιριθ (θάνοιριθιθ)
Voc.	Ἄ θάνοιρ	Ἄ θάνοιρι (Ἄ θάνοιριθε)

## 101. θρυσιτ, masc., the back.

Nom. & Acc.	θρυσιτ	θρυσιττα
Gen.	θρυσια	θρυσιττα
Dat.	θρυσιτ	θρυσιτταιθ
Voc.	Ἄ θρυσιτ	Ἄ θρυσιττα

## 102. θρειτ, masc., a morsel, grip.

Nom. & Acc.	θρειτ	θρειττα
Gen.	θρειτα	θρειττα
Dat.	θρειτ	θρειτταιθ
Voc.	Ἄ θρειτ	Ἄ θρειττα

103. Some nouns of this declension, ending in *t* or *n*, form their nominative pl. by adding *ta* or *te* to the nom. sing. These may add *th* to form gen. pl., as—

θόιν,* a bog,	nom. pl.	θόιντε
τάιν, a drove,	„	τάιντε
θλιαθάιν, a year,	„	θλιαθάντε†

\* θόιν is also 5th declension. See Heteroclite Nouns, par. 131.

† θλιαθάντε after numerals, as οχτ θλιαθάντε, eight years.

104. Some nouns of this declension form their nom. plural by adding *nna* to the gen. singular. These may drop the final *a* in the gen. plural:—

NOM. PLURAL.		
am, time	amanna	or amannia
riut, a stream	riotá	„, riotanna
rium, m., a back		riomanna
guet, a voice	götá	„, götanna
gream, m., a morsel		greamanna
cit, or ciot, a shower	ceatá	„, ceatanna
clear, a trick	cleara	„, clearanna
anam, a soul	anma	„, anmanna
dat, a colour	datá	„, datanna
ainm, a name	ainmne, ainmneacá, ainmanna	
maiðm, a defeat	maiðma, maiðmanna	

### 105. Other Nominatives Plural.

gníom, a deed, an act makes gníomáritá\*

conníatá, a compact,

covenant	„	conníritá
cáint, a tax	„	cánaicá
buacailí, a boy	„	buacailí
cliámain, a son-in-law	„	cliámainacá
teabaird, † f., a bed	„	teabta, teaptacá, teaptá
curo, a share, a portion	„	cotca, cotana

For a list of nouns belonging to this declension, see Appendix III.

\* Really pl. of gníomáritá. † Cáin is also 5th declension.

‡ Also spelled teabaird.

## THE FOURTH DECLENSION.

106. The 4th declension includes (1) personal nouns in *airē*, *airē*, *airē*, *airē* (sometimes spelled *airō*, *airō*, *airō*), which are all masculine; (2) diminutives in *in* (said to be all masculine); (3) abstract derivatives formed from the gen. sing. feminine of adjectives (all feminine), as *gīte*, brightness, from *gēat*; *pēite*, generosity, from *pīat*; *āitne*, beauty, from *āluinn*, &c.; (4) all nouns ending in vowels, and which do not belong to the 5th declension. To assist the student a list of the most important nouns of the 5th declension is given in the Appendix IV.

107. This declension differs from all others in having all the cases of the singular exactly alike.

108. The nominative plural is usually formed by adding *i*, *irē* or *ādā*.

109. The genitive plural is like the nom. pl., but *eadō* is frequently added in other grammars. There is no necessity whatever for this, because both cases are pronounced alike.

110. Nouns of more than one syllable ending in *a* form their nom. plural in *airē*, or *ai*, as *mālā*, a bag, pl. *mālairē*, or *mālai*; *cōtā*, a coat, pl. *cōtairē*, or *cōtai*.

111. *caillín*, masc., a girl.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc. <i>caillín</i>	<i>caillín</i>	or ( <i>caillín</i> ide)
Gen. <i>caillín</i>	<i>caillín</i> (caillín)	„ ( <i>caillín</i> ide)
Dat. <i>caillín</i>	<i>caillín</i> ib	„ ( <i>caillín</i> ib)
Voc. <i>a caillín</i>	<i>a caillín</i>	„ ( <i>a caillín</i> ide)

112. *tigsearpana* a lord.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc. <i>tigsearpana</i>	<i>tigsearpana</i>	<i>tigsearpanai</i> (-airé)
Gen. <i>tigsearpana</i>	<i>tigsearpana</i>	<i>tigsearpanai</i> (-airé)
Dat. <i>tigsearpana</i>	<i>tigsearpana</i> ib	<i>tigsearpanai</i> ib(-airéib)
Voc. <i>a tigsearpana</i>	<i>a tigsearpana</i>	<i>a tigsearpanai</i> (-airé)

113. The following nouns take *te* immediately after the last consonant to form the nominative plural:—

<i>baile</i> , a town	plural <i>baile</i> or <i>baileacá</i>
<i>rloinne</i> , a surname	„ <i>rloinnte</i>
<i>múilte</i> , a mule	„ <i>múilte</i>
<i>mile</i> , a thousand, a mile	„ <i>milte</i> *
<i>léine</i> , a shirt	„ <i>léinte</i> , <i>léinteacá</i>
<i>teíne</i> ,† a fire	„ <i>teínte</i> , <i>teínteacá</i>
<i>cúinne</i> , a corner	„ <i>cúinnte</i> <i>cúinní</i>

114. The following nouns add *te* in nominative plural, viz., all nouns ending in *de* or *ge*—e.g. *craoide*, a heart, pl. *craoide* ; also *caoi*, a way, a method ; *taoi*, a fool ; *raoi*, a wise man ; *draoi*, a druid ; *taaoi*, a curl.

\* *mile*, a thousand, or a mile, is invariable after a numeral.

† *teíne* is also 5th. See Heteroclite nouns, par. 131.

Σνό, a work (pl. Σνότα),\* ηνό, or η, a thing (pl. ητέ); ουινε, a person, makes ηδοινε in nom. pl.

υινγε, an ounce,	„	υινγεαδα	„
εαρνα, a rib,	„	εαρναδα	„

115. A few proper nouns, although not ending in a vowel or ίν, belong to this declension, and do not change their form in any of their cases, viz.:—  
Ράοηλις, Patrick; Σελρόι, Gerald; Μαυρις, Maurice;  
Καθλοιρ, Cahir.

The word ινετ, a people, does not change in gen.

### THE FIFTH DECLENSION.

116. Most of the nouns belonging to this declension end in a vowel, and are, with a few exceptions, feminine.

117. The genitive singular is formed by adding a *broad consonant*.

This consonant varies in different nouns, but is usually *n*, *nn*, sometimes *t*, *t̄*, or *c*. When the nominative singular ends in a consonant, *α* or *ea* comes between that consonant and the consonant added.

118. The dative singular is formed by attenuating the genitive. In the case of those nouns which form the genitive by adding *c*, the dative singular is usually like the nominative.

---

\*Σνόταρόε is spoken in Kerry.

119. The nominative plural, as a general rule, is formed by adding *ə* to the genitive singular. A few form their nominative plural by adding *e* to the gen. sing. This is accompanied with syncope, as in *cláirœ*, friends; *náimœ*, enemies; *gáisne*, smiths; and *áisne*, rivers, which are the plurals of *caíla*, *náim*, *gáis*, and *áis*, or *áis*.

Some others form the nominative plural by attenuating the genitive singular, as in *laðain*, ducks; *coim*, hounds; *ticir*, twenty; *caoiðis*, sheep; *comhgrain*, neighbours.

The genitive plural is exactly like the genitive singular.

### Examples.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
120.	peairfa, fem., a person.	
Nom. & Acc.	peairfa	peairfan
Gen.	peairfan	peairfan
Dat.	peairfan	peairfanal
Voc.	ə peairfa	ə peairfan

121.	caíla, fem., a friend.
------	------------------------

Nom. & Acc.	caíla	cláirœ
Gen.	caílao	caílao
Dat.	caílai	cláirtoib
Voc.	ə caíla	ə cláirœ

## SINGULAR. PLURAL.

122. *gába*, masc., a smith.

Nom. & Acc.	<i>gába</i>	<i>gáibne</i>
Gen.	<i>gábann</i>	<i>gábann</i>
Dat.	<i>gábainn</i>	<i>gáibní</i>
Voc.	<i>a gába</i>	<i>a gáibne</i>

123. *láca*, fem., a duck.

Nom. & Acc.	<i>láca</i>	<i>lácam</i>
Gen.	<i>lácan</i>	<i>lácan</i>
Dat.	<i>lácam</i>	<i>lácanai</i>
Voc.	<i>a láca</i>	<i>a lácan</i>

124. *cúirfe*, fem., a vein.

Nom. & Acc.	<i>cúirfe</i>	<i>cúirfeann</i>
Gen.	<i>cúirfeann</i>	<i>cúirfeann</i>
Dat.	<i>cúirfeann</i>	<i>cúirfeannai</i>
Voc.	<i>a cúirfe</i>	<i>a cúirfeann</i>

125. *caorpa*, fem., a sheep.

Nom. & Acc.	<i>caorpa</i>	<i>caorpa</i>
Gen.	<i>caorpa</i>	<i>caorpa</i>
Dat.	<i>caorpa</i>	<i>caorpa</i> , <i>caorpa</i>
Voc.	<i>a caorpa</i>	<i>a caorpa</i> or <i>a caorpa</i>

126. *cátaoip*, fem., a chair.

Nom. & Acc.	<i>cátaoip</i>	<i>cátaoipeas</i>
Gen.	<i>cátaoipeas</i>	<i>cátaoipeas</i>
Dat.	<i>cátaoip</i>	<i>cátaoipeasai</i>
Voc.	<i>a cátaoip</i>	<i>a cátaoipeas</i>

## SINGULAR (no Plural).

127.	Nom. & Acc.	Éire (Ireland)
	Gen.	Éireann
	Dat.	Éirinn
	Voc.	Á Éire
128.	Nom. & Acc.	Teampair (Tara)
	Gen.	Teampas
	Dat.	Teampais or Teamhair
	Voc.	Á Teamhair

129.	Nom. & Acc.	Alba (Scotland)
	Gen.	Alban
	Dat.	Albain
	Voc.	Á Alba

130. The following nouns are used only in the plural, referring originally rather to the *inhabitants* of the place than to the place itself:—

## Sacraṇa, England.

Nom. & Acc.	Sacraṇa or Sacraim		
Gen.	Sacran		
Dat.	Sacraṇaiḥ		
	Laigin,	Connacta,	Ulairō,
	Leinster.	Connaught.	Ulster
Nom. & Acc.	Laigin	Connacta	Ulairō
Gen.	Laigean	Connact	Ulairō
Dat.	Laigénib	Connactaiḥ	Ultaisib

A large list of the commonly used nouns, which belong to this declension, are given in Appendix IV.

### Heteroclite Nouns.

131. Heteroclite nouns are those which belong to more than one declension. The following are the chief nouns of this class. We give only the genitive case in the singular, as the other cases present no difficulty. The irregular nominative plurals only are given:—

NOUN.    DECLENSIONS.    GEN. SING.    NOM. PL.

<i>vniatæn</i> , a word	1 & 2	<i>vniatæn</i> <i>vniatæne</i>	
<i>r̄siāt</i> , a shield	1 & 2	<i>r̄séit</i> <i>r̄séite</i>	
<i>teine</i> , a fire	4 & 5	<i>teine</i> <i>teinead̄</i>	<i>teinte</i>
<i>beata</i> , life	4 & 5	<i>beata</i> <i>beatad̄</i>	
<i>r̄lige</i> , a way	4 & 5	<i>r̄lige</i> <i>r̄ligead̄</i>	<i>r̄lige</i>
<i>coill</i> , a wood	2 & 5	<i>coille</i> <i>coillead̄</i>	<i>coille</i>
<i>móin</i> , a bog	3 & 5	<i>móna</i> <i>mónad̄</i>	<i>móinte</i>
<i>talam</i> , m., land	1 & 5	<i>talam</i> , m. <i>talman</i> , f.	
<i>eornia</i> , barley	4 & 5	<i>eornia</i> <i>eornan</i>	
<i>vneitæam</i> , a judge	1 & 5	<i>vneitæm</i> <i>vneitæaman</i>	<i>vneitæam</i> <i>vneitæamna</i>

NOUN.	DECLENSIONS.	GEN. SING.	NOM. PL.
peίceam̄, a debtor	1 & 5	peίcim̄ { peίceam̄an	peίceam̄an̄ { peίceam̄na
rrón̄, f., a nose	2 & 3	rróine { rróna	
cuac̄, a cuckoo	1 & 2	cuacī, m. { cuacīe, f.	cuacī { cuacīa
cóm̄pa, a coffer, coffin	4 & 5	cóm̄pa { cóm̄pan	cóm̄pana
cáim̄, a tax	3 & 5	cána { cánaç	cána { cánaça
corón̄, a crown	2 & 5	coróine { corónaç cón̄naç	corónaça

All abstract nouns ending in *ear* or *ar* may belong either to the 1st or 3rd declension; as, *aoiñnear*, pleasure, gen. *aoiñnir* or *aoiñnear*. Being abstract nouns they are seldom used in the plural.

### Irregular Nouns.

SINGULAR. PLURAL.

132. teac̄, masc., a house.

Nom. & Acc.	teac̄, tis̄	tis̄te
Gen.	tis̄e*	tis̄te(að), teac̄
Dat.	teac̄, tis̄	tis̄tið
Voc.	a teac̄, tis̄	a tis̄te

\* It has also the forms *tis̄e* in gen. and *tis̄ið* in dative.

## SINGULAR. PLURAL.

γλιαθ, masc., a mountain.

Nom. & Acc.	γλιαθ	γλειθτε
Gen.	γλειθε	γλειθτε
Dat.	γλειθ, γλιαθ	γλειθτιθ
Voc.	α γλιαθ	α γλειθτε

αταιρ, masc., a father.

Nom. & Acc.	αταιρ	αιτρε or αιτρεασα
Gen.	αταιρ	αιτρεασ, αιτρεασα
Dat.	αταιρ	αιτρεασαιθ
Voc.	α αταιρ	α αιτρε or α αιτρεασα

τειρθριάρ, f., a sister (*by blood*).

Nom. & Acc.	τειρθριάρ	τειρθριάρασα
Gen.	τειρθρεαταιρ	τειρθριάρασα
Dat.	τειρθριάριαρ	τειρθριάρασαιθ

In these words the θρ is pronounced like φ.

The words μάεαιρ, *a mother*; θράεαιρ, *a brother* (*in religion*); and τεαρθράεαιρ, *a brother* (*by blood*), are declined like αταιρ. The genitive of τιάρ, *a sister* (*in religion*), is τεαταιρ (or τιάρα).

## SINGULAR. PLURAL.

ρι, masc., a king.

Nom. & Acc.	ρι	ριστε, ριοσα, ριοστα
Gen.	ριος	ριστε, ριος
Dat.	ρις	ριστιθ
Voc.	α ρι	α ριστε

## SINGULAR. PLURAL.

bēan, fem., a woman.

Nom. & Acc.	bēan	mna
Gen.	mna	bān
Dat.	mnaor	mnaib
Voc.	Δ bēan	Δ mna

bō, fem., a cow.

Nom. & Acc.	bō	ba
Gen.	bō	bō
Dat.	būm	būaiib
Voc.	Δ bō	Δ ba

Óia, masc., God.

Nom. & Acc.	Óia	Óée, Óéite
Gen.	Óé	Óia, Óéiteau
Dat.	Óia	Óéitib
Voc.	Δ Óé, Δ Óia	Δ Óée

tā, masc., a day.

## SINGULAR. PLURAL.

Nom. & Acc.	tā	laete, laeteanta*
Gen.	lae	laeteatō, laeteanta, tā
Dat.	tō, tā	laetiib, laeteantaiib
Voc.	Δ tā	Δ laete, Δ laeteanta

cŕē, fem., soil, earth.

Nom. & Acc.	cŕē	cŕētēana
Gen.	cŕiaatō, cŕētēanatō	cŕiaatō
Dat.	cŕētō, cŕē	cŕētēanatib
Voc.	Δ cŕē	Δ cŕētēana

\* tā is generally used after numerals.

## SINGULAR. PLURAL.

mí, fem., a month.

Nom. &amp; Acc. mí míorat

Gen. míora míor

Dat. mír, mí míoraiß

ceó, masc., a fog.

Nom. &amp; Acc. ceó ceóðana, ceóða

Gen. ciac ceoig ceó

Dat. ceó ceóðaiß

sá, masc., a spear, javelin, sunbeam.

Nom. &amp; Acc. sá sáete, sáoi, sámité

Gen. sá, sáe, sáoi sáoite(að), sátt

Dat. sá sáetiß, sáoitiß

ó or ua, masc., a grandson.

Nom. &amp; Acc. ó, ua ui

Gen. i, ui ua

Dat. ó, ua iß. uiß

Voc. a ui a ui

sé, masc., a goose

Nom. &amp; Acc. sé or séað séanna, séana, séiðe

Gen. sé, " séað, séoïð séanna, séað

Dat. sé, " séað séannaïß, séaðaiß

Voc. a sé, a séað a séanna, a séaða

friß, fem., a fleshworm.

Nom. &amp; Acc. friß frißdeada

Gen. frißde

Dat. frißde

† mí after numerals as oēt mí, 8 months: míonna is spoken in Kerry as plural of mí.

## CHAPTER III.

## The Adjective.

## I. DECLENSION OF ADJECTIVES.

**133.** In Irish the adjective agrees with the noun which it qualifies in gender, number, and case.

There are four declensions of adjectives. Adjectives are declined very much like nouns; the great difference is that they never\* take the termination *v* in the dative plural (though formerly they did). The dative plural is invariably like the nominative plural.

Adjectives, in forming their genitive singular, undergo the same VOWEL-CHANGES as nouns, as—

gloim, blue, gen. masc. گلیم  
géal, bright, „ گیل, &c.

## FIRST DECLENSION.

**134.** All adjectives ending in a broad consonant, as *mór*, *bán*, *rionn*, &c., belong to the 1st declension.

**135.** When an adjective of the 1st declension agrees with a masculine noun, it is declined like a noun of the 1st declension (see *maor*, &c., pars. 55, 57), except that the nom., acc., dat., and voc. plural are always alike, and are formed by adding *a* to the nominative singular.

---

\*When used as nouns they take the termination.

136. When an adjective of the 1st declension agrees with a feminine noun, it is declined like a noun of the 2nd declension (see *cor*, par. 67, &c.), but it never takes *το* in the dative plural.

Adjectives ending in *ας* form their plural by adding *α*, both for masculine and feminine.

### Examples.

137.

*τόρη*, big.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

	Maso.	Fem.	Masc. & Fem.
Nom. & Acc.	τόρη	τόρη	τόρηα
Gen.	τόρηρ	τόρηρε	τόρη
Dat.	τόρη	τόρηρ	τόρηα
Voc.	τόρη	τόρη	τόρηα

138.

*γεατή*, bright.

Nom. &amp; Acc.

	γεατή	γεατή	γεατα
Gen.	γειτ	γειτε	γεατη
Dat.	γεατή	γειτ	γεατα
Voc.	γειτ	γεατή	γεατα

139.

*τοίρεας*, straight, direct.

Nom. &amp; Acc.

	τοίρεας	τοίρεας	τοίρεασα
Gen.	τοίρις	τοίριζε	τοίρεας
Dat.	τοίρεας	τοίρις	τοίρεασα
Voc.	τοίρις	τοίρεας	τοίρεασα

140. The following list of adjectives gives examples of the vowel-changes mentioned above. The genitive

masculine is given; the genitive feminine is formed by adding e:—

NOM.	GEN.		NOM.	GEN.	
lom	lum	bare	rearb	reirb	bitter
ðorm	ðuirm	blue	reangs	reings	slender
ðorþ	ðuirþ	rough	ðeup	ðeip	sharp
ðrom	ðruim	bent	ðiþeadc	ðiþig	straight
ðonn	ðuinn	brown	ðaigneadc	ðaignis	lonely
ðos	ðuis	soft	ðlbanadc	ðlbanais	Scotch
ðoðt	ðoict	poor	ðiðn	ðinn	fair
ðrom	ðruim	heavy	ðiðl	ðeil	generous
meair	mir	active	ðiðuc	ðiðc	wet
ceapt	cipt (ceiþt)	right	ðeag	ðið	small
ðear	ðeir	pretty	ðrión	ðriñ	withered
ðearþ	ðeirþ	red	ðeann	ðeinn	storn

141. There are five or six adjectives of the first declension which are syncopated in the genitive singular feminine and in the plural:—

NOMINATIVE.	GEN. SING.	PLURAL.	
	Masc.	Fem.	Both Genders.
uafal, noble	uafail	uafle	uafle
vitlear, beloved, dear	vitlir	vitre	vitre
rearmar, fat	rearmair	reimre	rearmra
iriol, low	iril	irle	irle
ðearþ, short	ðiþr*	ðiþra (irreg.)	ðearra

\* ðearra is sometimes used in the spoken language.

## SECOND DECLENSION.

142. All adjectives ending in a slender consonant, except those in *amail*, belong to the second declension.

In the singular all the cases, both masculine and feminine, are alike, *except the genitive feminine* which is formed by adding e.

In the plural both genders are alike. All the cases, with the exception of the genitive, are alike, and are formed by adding e to the nominative singular.

The genitive plural is the same as the nominative singular.

## Example.

143.	ma <small>is</small> t, good.		
	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.	Both Genders.
Masculine.	Feminine.		
Nom. & Acc.	ma <small>is</small> t	ma <small>is</small> t	ma <small>is</small> tē
Gen.	ma <small>is</small> t	ma <small>is</small> tē	ma <small>is</small> t
Dat.	ma <small>is</small> t	ma <small>is</small> t	ma <small>is</small> tē
Voc.	ma <small>is</small> t	ma <small>is</small> t	ma <small>is</small> tē

144. Notice the following examples of syncope in the genitive feminine and in the plural:—

aoiðinn, gen. sing. fem. and pl. aoiðne, pleasant

álinn, „ „ „ álinne (álin)e, beautiful

milf, „ „ „ milfē, sweet

145. The following adjectives are irregular:—

cóir, gen. sing. fem. and plural cóir, right, just

teacair, „ „ „ teacair, difficult

rocair, „ „ „ rocar, easy

## THE THIRD DECLENSION.

146. The third declension includes all those adjectives which end in *αντ*. This termination has the same signification as the English affix *like* in warlike, or *ly* in manly, princely, &c.

In both numbers the two genders are alike. All the cases in the singular are the same, except the genitive, which is formed by adding *α*. This is always accompanied by syncope. All the cases of the plural (except the genitive) are the same as the gen. sing. There are no exceptions or irregularities in this declension.

## Example.

147.	ρεαματ, manly.	
	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	Both Genders.	Both Genders.
Nom. & Acc.	ρεαματ	ρεαματα
Gen.	ρεαματα	ρεαματ
Dat.	ρεαματ	ρεαματα
Voc.	ρεαματ	ρεαματα

## FOURTH DECLENSION.

148. All adjectives ending in a vowel belong to the fourth declension, as *ραδα*, long; *ορδα*, golden. They have no inflexions whatever, all the cases, singular and plural, being exactly alike.

There are two exceptions—viz., *te*, hot, warm; and *beo*, alive. *Te* (often spelled *teit*), becomes *teo* in the genitive singular feminine, and also in the plural of both genders.

*Beo*, alive, becomes *beoda* in the plural. In the singular it is quite regular, except after the word *ðia*; its genitive is then *bi*, as *mac ðe bi*, the Son of the living God.

### Rules for the Aspiration of the Adjectives.

These rules really belong to Syntax, but for the convenience of the student we give them here.

**149.** (a) An adjective beginning with an aspirable consonant is aspirated in the nominative and accusative feminine singular, in the genitive masculine singular, and in the dative and vocative singular of both genders.

(b) The adjective is also aspirated in the nominative and accusative plural when the noun ends in a slender consonant.

### Exceptions to the Rules for Aspiration.

**150.** (a) An adjective beginning with *v* or *c* is usually not aspirated when the noun ends in *v*, *n*, *t*, *l*, or *r* (dentals).

(b) *c* and *g* are usually not aspirated when the preceding word ends in *c*, *g*, or *n*.

(c) *p* and *b* are usually not aspirated when the preceding word ends in *p*, *b*, or *m*.

These exceptions apply to most rules for the aspiration of nouns as well as adjectives.

(d) The genitive of nouns of the 3rd and 5th declensions ought not to have the initial of the adjective following them aspirated. Usage, however, differs somewhat on this point.

(e) In the spoken language of Connaught the adjective is not aspirated in the dative singular masculine.

### Rules for Eclipsing the Adjective.

151. (a) The adjective is usually eclipsed in the genitive plural, even though the article is not used before the noun; and if the adjective begins with a vowel *n* is prefixed.

(b) The initial of an adjective following a noun in the dative sing. should, as a rule, be aspirated; but whenever the noun is eclipsed after the article the adjective is often eclipsed also; aspiration in this case is just as correct as eclipsis, and is more usual.

### Examples

152. Noun, Adjective and Article declined in combination.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	an fír móir, the big man.	
Nom. & Acc.	an fír móir	na fir móra
Gen.	an fir móir	na fir móra
Dat.	teir an fir móir	teir na fir móra
Voc.	a fir móir	a fir móra

an treamhrós glar beag, the green little shamrock.	
Nom. & Acc. an treamhrós glar	na réamhrósá glara
beag	beaga
Gen. na réamhróisge glair	na réamhrós nglar
bige	mbeag
Dat. o'n treamhróis glair	ó na réamhrósair
bis	glara beaga
Voc. a réamhrós glar	a réamhrósá glara
beag	beaga

an treaman-bean bocht, the poor old woman.

Nom. & Acc. an treaman-bean	
na treaman-mná	na treaman-ban
bocht	bocht
Gen. na treaman-mná	na treaman-ban
boichte	mbocht
Dat. o'o'n treaman-	to na treaman-mnáis
mnáoi bocht	bocta
Voc. a treaman-bean	a treaman-mná
bocht	bocta

**N.B.**—When an adjective precedes its noun it is invariable.

#### Comparison of Adjectives.

153. In Irish there are two comparisons—(1) the comparison of equality, (2) the comparison of superiority.

154. The comparison of equality is formed by placing *cóm* (or *co*), "as" or "so," before the adjective, and *te*, "as," after it. (This *te* becomes *teir* before the article, and then causes *eclipsis* if the noun be singular.)

If a verb occurs in the second portion of the sentence, *asúr* (not *re*) must be used for the second "as" in English. *Tá Seán comh mórf le Seumas*, John is as big as James. *Ní fuit rí comh láidir leis an bhean*, he is not as strong as the man. *Ní fuit rí comh maith asúr (ar) vúi rí*, he is not as good as he was.

**155.** The comparison of superiority has three degrees—the **positive**, the **comparative**, and the **superlative**. The positive is the simple form of the adjective, as *bán*, *geal*. The **comparative** and **superlative** have exactly the same form as the genitive singular feminine of the adjective, as *báine*, *gíle*.

**156.** The comparative degree is always preceded by some part of the verb *is*, expressed or understood, and in almost every case is followed by the word *ná* (or *ioná*), "than."

Ír *gíle* an *grian* *ná* an *geatach*,

The sun is brighter than the moon.

*An fárrí túra ná do *thearbháctair*?*

Are you better than your brother?

**157.** In a comparative sentence the verb *tá* (or any other verb) may be used, but even then the *verb is must be used*.

Whenever *tá* (or any other verb) is used in a com-

parative sentence, the comparative must be preceded by the word *níor* (i.e., *ní* or *nít*, a thing, and the verb *ir*) as—

Τά εν ήμερη *níor* γίγε *ná* εν ήμερας,  
The sun is brighter than the moon.

Δεν θεω τύ *níor* φεαρη *ná* το θεατήρατοι?  
Are you better than your brother?

**158.** As stated in previous paragraph *níor*=*ní* + *ir*. If the time of the comparison be past *ní ba* is used instead of *níor*. In conditional comparisons *ní ba* is employed.

Θα θοίστι λιον δο μαΐσ *Úna* *ní* θ' αοιροε *ná* *Maire*.  
I thought that *Úna* was taller than *Maire*.

**159.** Every superlative sentence in Irish is a relative sentence. Thus instead of saying "the best man" we say "the man (who) is best"; for "the tallest man," we say "the man (who) is tallest." The word "who" in this case is never translated, for the obvious reason that there is really no simple relative pronoun in Irish.

**160.** If the sentence happens to be in the past or future "the best man" will have to be translated as "the man (who) was best" or "the man (who) will be best." In such cases *ir* or *ar* can never be used. *ba* or *bu* must be used in the past tense.

If the first portion of the sentence contains a verb in the conditional mood, the conditional of *if* (viz., *do* *ba* : *do* is often omitted) must be used.

The highest hill in Ireland, *an cnoc if a'irde i n-Éirinn.*

The biggest man was sitting in the smallest chair,

*Bi an peair ba mò na fuidhe iur an gceataoir ba luig̱a.*

The best man would have the horse,

*Do bheadh an capall ag an bheair do b'feadh*

(Lit. The horse would be at the man (who) would be best).

The English comparative of Inferiority is translated by *nior luig̱a* followed by an abstract noun corresponding to the English adjective: *e.g.*, *nior luig̱a feàrramhaisct*, less manly.

### Intensifying Particles.

**161.** The meaning of an adjective can be intensified by placing any of the following particles before the positive of the adjective. All these particles cause aspiration.

*An*, very ; *fior* (or *fir*), very or truly (as truly good) ; *niog̱*, very ; *niog̱ mait*, very good.

*Sté*, pure (as pure white) ; *mó*, too, excessively.

*rár*, exceedingly ; *ár*, very (in a depreciating sense).

*mait*, good ; *an-mait*, very good ; *fior-mait*, truly good ; *mó-fuair*, too cold.

*rár te*, excessively hot (warm) ; *nír-íriol*, very low : *ár-ghrándá*, very ugly.

162. In the spoken language the adjective is sometimes intensified by repeating the positive twice, as—

bi ré tinn tinn, he was very sick.

tá ré troma troma, it is very heavy.

lá riuic riuic, a very wet day.

163. Sometimes *ve* is annexed to the comparative; it is really the prepositional pronoun *ve*, of it.

lli móroe (mó + ve) go naѓao. It is not likely that I shall go.

lli mírroe (meѓra + ve) veit aѓ břat oř! It is no harm to be depending on you!

164. Although the comparative and the superlative are absolutely alike in form, yet they may be easily distinguished :—

(1) By the context ; the comparative can be used only when we are speaking of two persons or things, the superlative is always used for more than two.

(2) By the word *na* (than) which always follows the comparative, except when *ve* is used ; the superlative is never followed by either.

165. When comparing adjectives (*i.e.*, giving the three degrees of comparison), it is usual to use *nior* before the comparative, and *ir* before the superlative, as—

POSITIVE. COMPARATIVE. SUPERLATIVE.

bán nior báine ir báine

glas nior glaire ir glaire

Remember that *nior* and *ir* change their forms according to the tense of the verb in the sentence.

160.	Irregular	Comparison.
POSITIVE.		COMPARATIVE.
βεѧς, little or small		ιυ᷂ѧ
τѧωѧ, long		τω᷂ωء, τω᷂ωء, τιѧ
τω᷂η, big		τω᷂
οἰλ, bad		τεαρѧ
τω᷂η, good		τεαρη
τεαρη, short		τιօηηѧ
τηεѧς,* fine		τηεѧςčѧ
τηηηιc, often		τηηηιc, τηηηηѧ
τε (τειt), warm		τεօ
τηηηη, dry		τιօηηѧ
τηηηη(ѧ) } easy	{	τηηηѧ
սηηη		սηѧ
ιοηηηηη, dear, beloved	ιοηηηηηη or ιηηηηη	
τηηηη, near (of place)	τηηηηη	
τηηηη, near	{ τηηηηη τηηηηη	
τηηηη, brave, strong	{ τηηηηη τηηηηη	
τηηηηη, ugly	τηηηηηη	
ձηηηη, high	{ ձηηηη ձηηηη ձոηηη	
ιοηηη, many		τω᷂ or ιιѧ (more numerous)

Τηηηη and τηηηη, nearer, sooner, are comparatives which have no positive.

N.B.—The superlatives of the above adjectives have exactly the same forms as the comparatives.

\* This word was formerly spelled τηεѧςčѧ or τηεѧςčѧ, and these forms may be used in the plural.

## 167. Numeral Adjectives.

## CARDINALS.

1, <i>αν</i> ... <i>απάν</i>	1st, <i>ceuo</i> ,* <i>ανημάθ</i>
2, <i>τα</i>	2nd, <i>ταρα</i> , <i>ταρηα</i> , <i>τόμαθ</i>
3, <i>τρι</i> ,	3rd, <i>τριομάθ</i> <i>τριεαρ</i>
4, <i>ceιτρε</i>	4th, <i>ceιτριμάθ</i>
5, <i>cύις</i>	5th, <i>cύισεαθ</i> , <i>cύισημάθ</i>
6, <i>τέ</i>	6th, <i>τειρεαθ</i> , <i>τέμαθ</i>
7, <i>τεατ</i>	7th, <i>τεατημάθ</i>
8, <i>οct</i>	8th, <i>οctημάθ</i>
9, <i>ηδοι</i>	9th, <i>ηδομάθ</i>
10, <i>τεις</i>	10th, <i>τειεμάθ</i> , <i>τειέαθ</i>
11, <i>αν τευς</i>	11th, <i>ανημάθ τευς</i>
12, <i>τα τεας</i>	12th, <i>ταρα τευς</i>
13, <i>τρι τευς</i>	13th, <i>τριεαρ τευς</i> , <i>τριομάθ τευς</i>
14, <i>ceιτρε τεας</i>	14th, <i>ceιτριμάθ τευς</i>
15, <i>cύις τευς</i>	15th, <i>cύισεαθ τευς</i>
16, <i>τέ τευς</i>	16th, <i>τειρεαθ τευς</i>
17, <i>τεατ τευς</i>	17th, <i>τεατημάθ τευς</i>
18, <i>οct τευς</i>	18th, <i>οctημάθ τευς</i>
19, <i>ηδοι τευς</i>	19th, <i>ηδομάθ τευς</i>
20, <i>fiče</i>	20th, <i>fičeαθ</i>
21, <i>αν ιρ</i> (or <i>αι</i> ) <i>fiče</i> ;	21st, <i>ανημάθ ιρ fičιο</i>
<i>αν ιρ fičιο</i>	

## ORDINALS.

\* The c of *ceuo* is usually aspirated after the article.

## CARDINALS.

## ORDINALS.

22, τὸ or τὸν ἵμιον;	22nd, ταρταρὸν ἵμιον;
or τὸν ἵμιον	ταρταρὸν ἵμιον
28, τριή ἵμιον;	23rd, τριοτητὸν ἵμιον or τριετὴν ἵμιον
30, τετράς ἵμιον [τριοτητα]	30th, τετρατητὸν ἵμιον
31, ἀντὶ τευτὸς ἵμιον	31st, ἀντητὸν τευτὸς ἵμιον
32, τὸ or τὸ τευτὸς ἵμιον	32nd, ταρταρὸν τευτὸν ἵμιον
37, γεατητὸς τευτὸς ἵμιον	37th, γεατητητὸν τευτὸν ἵμιον
40, τὸ ἵμιον [κατητα]	40th, τὸ ἵμιοντεα
41, ἀντὶ τὸ ἵμιον	41st, ἀντητὸν τὸ ἵμιον
44, κατητητὸς ἵμιον	44th, κατητητητὸν τὸ ἵμιον
50, τετράς τὸ ἵμιον; leit- κέντη, καογά	50th, τετρατητὸν τὸ ἵμιον
51, ἀντὶ τευτὸς τὸ ἵμιον	51st, ἀντητὸν τευτὸν τὸ ἵμιον
60, τριή ἵμιον [γεατητα]	60th, τριή ἵμιοντεα
61, ἀντὶ τριής ἵμιον	61st, ἀντητὸν τριής ἵμιον
70, τετράς τριής ἵμιον [γεατητητα]	70th, τετρατητητὸν τριής ἵμιον
71, ἀντὶ τευτὸς τριής ἵμιον	71st, ἀντητὸν τευτὸν τριής ἵμιον
80, κειτητὸς ἵμιον [οκτη- τητα]	80th, κειτητητὸν τεα
81, ἀντὶ κειτητὸς ἵμιον	81st, ἀντητὸν τητητὸς ἵμιον
90, τετράς κειτητὸς ἵμιον [ητητα]	90th, τετρατητητητὸν κειτητὸς ἵμιον

## CARDINALS.

91, <i>áon</i> <i>tauas</i> <i>ír</i> <i>ceitri</i>	91st, <i>áonmáth</i> <i>tauas</i> <i>áir</i> <i>riúr</i>
100, <i>céad</i> ( <i>ceud</i> )	100th, <i>ceudad</i>
101, <i>áon</i> <i>ír</i> <i>ceud</i>	101st, <i>áonmáth</i> <i>áir</i> <i>ceud</i>
200, <i>taí</i> <i>ceud</i>	200th, <i>taí</i> <i>ceudad</i>
300, <i>trí</i> <i>ceud</i>	300th, <i>trí</i> <i>ceudad</i>
400, <i>ceitri</i> <i>ceud</i>	400th, <i>ceitri</i> <i>ceudad</i>
800, <i>oict</i> <i>gceud</i>	800th, <i>oict</i> <i>gceudad</i>
1000, <i>mile</i>	1000th, <i>milead</i>
2000, <i>taí</i> <i>mile</i>	2000th, <i>taí</i> <i>milead</i>
3000, <i>trí</i> <i>mile</i>	3000th, <i>trí</i> <i>milead</i>
4000, <i>ceitri</i> <i>mile</i>	4000th, <i>ceitri</i> <i>milead</i>
1,000,000, <i>milliún</i>	1,000,000th, <i>milliúnad</i>

## ORDINALS.

91st, <i>áonmáth</i> <i>tauas</i> <i>áir</i> <i>ceitri</i>	91st, <i>áonmáth</i> <i>tauas</i> <i>áir</i> <i>riúr</i>
100th, <i>ceudad</i>	100th, <i>ceudad</i>
101st, <i>áonmáth</i> <i>áir</i> <i>ceud</i>	101st, <i>áonmáth</i> <i>áir</i> <i>ceud</i>
200th, <i>taí</i> <i>ceudad</i>	200th, <i>taí</i> <i>ceudad</i>
300th, <i>trí</i> <i>ceudad</i>	300th, <i>trí</i> <i>ceudad</i>
400th, <i>ceitri</i> <i>ceudad</i>	400th, <i>ceitri</i> <i>ceudad</i>
800th, <i>oict</i> <i>gceudad</i>	800th, <i>oict</i> <i>gceudad</i>
1000th, <i>milead</i>	1000th, <i>milead</i>
2000th, <i>taí</i> <i>milead</i>	2000th, <i>taí</i> <i>milead</i>
3000th, <i>trí</i> <i>milead</i>	3000th, <i>trí</i> <i>milead</i>
4000th, <i>ceitri</i> <i>milead</i>	4000th, <i>ceitri</i> <i>milead</i>
1,000,000th, <i>milliúnad</i>	1,000,000th, <i>milliúnad</i>

## Notes on the Numerals.

**168.** There is another very idiomatic way of expressing the numbers above twenty-one, viz., by placing the word *riúr* alone after the first numeral:—*teic* *riúr*, 30: *riúr* is really the genitive of *riú*, so that the literal meaning of *teic* *riúr* is ten of twenty; *teic* *scapair* *riúr*, 30 horses; *reacht* *mba* *riúr*, 27 cows.

**169.** Whenever any numeral less than twenty is used by itself (*i.e.*, not followed immediately by a noun), the particle *á\** must be used before it. This *á* prefixes *h-* to vowels:—*á h-áon*, one; *á taí*, two; *á h-oict*, eight.

*Tá* *ré* *á* *ceatair* *á* *clog*, it is four o'clock.

*Tá* *ré* *teat-hair* *á* *trí*, it is half past two.

\* In Ulster and Munster the article *an* is used instead of this *á*.

170. Very frequently in modern times the particle *ar* (= *asur*) is used instead of *ir* in numbers. *Ar* in numbers is pronounced iss.

171. *A* *ta* and *a* *ceatair* can be used only in the absence of nouns. If the nouns be expressed immediately after "two" and "four," *ta* and *ceat*re must be used.

172. *Aon*, one, when used with a noun almost always takes the word *amain* after the noun; as, *aon* *fean* *amain*, one man. *Aon* by itself usually means "any;" as, *aon* *fean*, any man; *aon* *ta*, any day. Sometimes *aon* is omitted and *amain* only is used, as *ta* *amain*, one day.

173. Under the heading "Ordinals" two forms will be found for nearly all the smaller numbers. *The forms given first are the ones generally used.* As the secondary forms are often met with in books, they are given for the sake of reference. *Céat*, first, is used by itself, but *aonmhao* is used in compound numbers, such as 21st, 31st, &c.

First, as an adverb, is *ar* *ta-túr* or *ar* *ta-túir*, never, *ceat*.

174. The *t* of *ta*, two is always aspirated except after a word ending in one of the letters, *t*, *n*, *c*, *l*, *r*, or after the possessive adjective *a*, her.

The words for 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90, given in brackets, are the old words for these numbers; they are not used now, and are given simply for reference.

175. *fīce*, *ceuo*, and *mile*, together with the old words for 30, 40, 50, &c., are really nouns\* and can be declined.

Nom.	<i>fīce</i>	gen.	<i>fīceas</i>	dat.	<i>fīcīo</i>	pl.	<i>fīcīo</i>
„	<i>ceuo</i>	„	<i>ceōo</i>	„	<i>ceuo</i>	„	<i>ceuota</i>
„	<i>mile</i>	„	<i>mile</i>	„	<i>mile</i>	„	<i>milce</i>

The other words are 5th declension, and form their genitive by adding *o*.

176. *Mile*, a thousand, or a mile, and *ceuo*, a hundred never change their forms after a numeral; *naoi mile*, 9,000, or 9 miles.

### The Personal Numerals.

177. The following numeral nouns are used especially of persons. All, with the exception of *oīr* and *beīr*, are compounds of the word *peār*, a man (the *f* of which has disappeared owing to aspiration), and the numeral adjectives.

<i>λοναρī</i> (λον- <i>peār</i> )	one person
[ <i>oīr</i> ( <i>oīar</i> )]	a pair, a couple
<i>beīr</i>	two persons, a couple†
<i>τριūr</i> (or <i>τριαρ</i> ) ( <i>τρī-<i>peār</i></i> )	three persons
<i>ceat̄r̄ar</i> ( <i>ceat̄αιr̄-<i>peār</i></i> )	four persons
<i>cūis̄eār</i>	five persons
<i>reīr̄eār</i>	six persons

\* See Syntax, par. 511 and 512.

† Used in the idiomatic expression for “alone.” See par. 654.

‡ *lānamā*, a married couple.

მორ-წერეაღ	}	seven persons
წალტაღ		
ოცაღ		eight persons
სალონაღ or სისაღ		nine persons
დესხეაბაღ		ten persons
თარეუს (თა-წეაღ-თეუს)		twelve persons

N.B.—The singular form of the article is used before these numerals; as *an cùigearl* *peაღ*, the five men.

### The Possessive Adjectives.

178. The term “possessive pronouns” has been incorrectly applied by many grammarians to the “possessive adjectives.” A pronoun is a word that can stand for a noun and be separated from the noun, as the words “mine” and “his” in the sentences, “This book is mine,” “This cap is his.” If I wish to say in Irish, “Did you see his father and mine?” I say, “*An მფარ ა ატარ აგურ მ’ ატარ*” (not *აგურ მი*). The possessive adjectives in Irish can never stand alone; hence they are not pronouns.

179. The possessive adjectives are as follows:—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
მი, my	ამ, our
თი, thy	თუმ (or თამ), your
ა, his or her	ა, their

180. *ა*, his; *ა*, her; and *ა*, their, are very easily distinguished by their initial effects on the following word.

181. The *o* of *mo* and *oo* is elided whenever they are followed by a word beginning with a vowel or *f*, as *m' þuinneōs*, my window; *o' aðair*, thy father.

182. Before a vowel *oo*, thy, is very often written *t* or *c*, as *o' aðair*, *t' aðair*, *c' aðair*, thy father; even *n-aðair* is sometimes wrongly written.

183. The possessive adjectives may take an emphatic increase, but this emphatic particle always follows the noun, and is usually joined to it by a hyphen; and should the noun be followed by one or more adjectives which qualify it, the emphatic particle is attached to the last qualifying adjective.

### The Emphatic Particles.

184. The emphatic particles can be used with (1) the possessive adjectives, (2) the personal pronouns, (3) the prepositional pronouns, and (4) the synthetic forms of the verbs. Excepting the first person plural all the particles have two forms. When the word to which they are attached ends in a *broad* vowel or consonant use the broad particles, otherwise employ the slender.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.	-rə, -re	-nə
2	-rə, -re	-rə, -re
3.	{Masc., -rən, -reən Fem., -re, -ri	-rən, -reən

## Examples.

mo teac-*ra*, *my* house ; a teac-*ran*, *his* house ; ar teac-*ne*, *our* house : mire, *myself* ; reircean, *himself* ; aca-*ran*, *at themselves* ; buailim-*re*, *I strike*.

185. The word *fein* may also be used (generally as a distinct word) to mark emphasis, either by itself or in conjunction with the emphatic particles : as

mo teac *fein*, *my own* house

mo teac-*ra* *fein*, even *my* house

mo teac bheag mór-*ra*, *my fine large* house

mo teac *fein* and mo teac-*ra* may both mean "my house," but the latter is used when we wish to distinguish our own property from that of another person; as, *your house and mine*, do teac-*ra* agur mo teac-*ra*.

186. The possessive adjectives are frequently compounded with the following prepositions :—

i, in (*ann*), in ; te, with ; oo, to ; o, from ; and *ra*, under.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

i, in or *ann*, in.

im, am 'mo, in my	inár, inár, i n-ár, in our
io, aó, 'oo, in thy, in your	i nbur, i nbur, in your
'na, i n-a, ina, in his, in her	na, i n-a, ina, in their

In the third person singular and plural iona, ionna, anna are also found written.

187.

te, with.

tem, te mo,* with my	te n-āp, with our
teo, te oo,* with thy or your	te nōup, with your
te n-ā, with his or her	te n-ā, with their

188.

to, to.

tom', to mo,* to my	taāp, to our
tooo', to oo,* to thy or your	to ūup, taā ūup, to your
taā, to his or her	taā, to their

189.

o, from.

om, o mo,* from my	o n-āp, from our
oo, o oo,* from thy or your	o nōup, from your
o n-ā, from his or her	o n-ā, from their

190.

pā or pō, under.

pām, pōm, under my	pā n-āp, pō n-āp, under our
pāo, pōo, under thy, your	pā nōup, pō nōup, under your
pā n-ā, pō n-ā, under his, her	pā n-ā, pō n-ā, under their

191. The following compounds are frequently used with verbal nouns:—

a5, at.

a5om, a5 mo,* at my	'5āp, 5āp, a5 āp, at our
a5oo, a5 oo,* at thy, your	a5 ūup, at your
a5ā, '5ā, 5ā, at his, her	a5ā, '5ā, or 5ā, at their

\* The forms marked with an asterisk are used in the North.

192. When "you" and "your" refer to one person, the singular words *tú* and *oo* are used in Irish, *o'atáir*, your father (when speaking to one person), *oibh n-atáir*, your father (when speaking to more than one.)

193. Those of the above combinations which are alike in form are distinguished by the initial effect they cause in the following word ; as, *o n-a tig*, from his house; *o n-a tig*, from her house; *o n-a tig*, from their house.

194. The above combinations may take the same emphatic increase as the uncompound possessive adjectives; *om tig féin*, from *my* own house; *om tig bheag mó-rá*, from *my* fine large house.

### Demonstrative Adjectives.

195. The demonstrative adjectives are *ro*,\* this; *rín*,† that; and *úvo*, that or yonder.

*ro* is frequently written *reó* when the vowel or consonant preceding it is slender.

These words come after the nouns they qualify, and should the noun be followed by any qualifying adjectives, *ro*, *rín* or *úvo* comes after the last qualifying adjective.

It is not enough to say *pean ro* or *bean rín* for "this man" or "that woman." The noun must

\* Also *re*, *reó*, or *re*.

† Also *roin*, *rain* or *ran*.

always be preceded by the article. "This man" is *an fear ró*; "these men," *ná fir róeo*; *an bean ró*, this woman; *an bean rín*, that woman.

196. The word *á* is used when a person or thing is connected in some way with the person to whom you speak or write; *an fear á*, that man (whom you have seen or heard of); *an oíoché á*, that particular night which you remember; or in pointing out an object at some distance, as—

*An bpeiceann tú an bád á?* Do you see that boat?

Also with the vocative case, as—

*A clóiginn ád tall atá gan teangaird.*

Thou skull over there that art without tongue.

### Indefinite Adjectives.

197. The chief indefinite adjectives are—*aon*, any; *éigin*, some, certain; *eile*, other; *uile* (after the noun), all, whole; and the phrase *ár bít*, any at all; *pé*, whatever.

e.g., *aon lár*, any day; *aon capall*, any horse; *an tír uile*, the whole country; *duine éigin*, a certain person; *an fear eile*, the other man. *An bpraca tú an leabhar i n-áit ár bít?* Did you see the book anywhere? *Ní fuil aifgeadó ar bít agam*, I have no money at all. *Uisceadach doibh eadó an Siogairde*, pé uairfeacht do bhi aige ná ná raibh. The Siogaidhe was a rascal, whatever nobility he had or hadn't.

198. The following words are *nouns*, and are fol-

lowed by a genitive or *te* with the dative. As they are employed to translate English indefinite adjectives, we give them here:—

mórán, much	túrúil mórán fíona agat, Have you much wine?
(an) iomao, a great deal, an iomao airgíod, a great a great many	deal of money
beagán, little	beagán arián, a little bread
(an) iomarca, too much	an iomarca uisce, too much water
an-éuit, rather much	an-éuit ríalann, rather much salt
óráin, } enough, sufficient rait, }	tá mo óráin arián agam, I have sufficient bread
oíreao (águr), as much } as, so much (as)	an oíreao rín óir, so much gold.
cuilleao, more	cuilleao arián, more bread
neárt, plenty, abundance	neárt airgíod, plenty of money
cuid, poinn or poinn, a share, some	cuid, poinn or poinn óir, some gold
a lán, many, numerous	tá a lán fear móréag i n-Éirinn. There are many fine men in Ireland

### 199. Translation of the word "Some."

(a) As has been said, *cuid*, *poinn* or *poinn* is used to translate the word "some," but there are other words used, as *tráon*, a drop, used for liquids; *doirnán*

or *doirinn*, a fistfull, used for hay, straw, corn, potatoes, &c.; *grainin*, a grain, used for meal, flour, tea, &c.; *pinginn*, a penny, used for money. All these words take a genitive.

(b) "Some of" followed by a noun is translated by *curo* *te* followed by a dative case.

(c) "Some of" followed by a singular pronoun is translated by *curo* *te*; when followed by a plural pronoun, by *curo* *as*.

<i>Tá bhráon bainne asam,</i>	I have some milk
<i>Tá gráinín riúcra aige,</i>	He has some sugar
<i>Curo te na peadarib,</i>	Some of the men
<i>Tá curio te rín otc,</i>	Some of that is bad
<i>Tá curio aca ro otc,</i>	Some of these are bad

### Translation of "Any."

200. (a) When "any" is used in connection with objects that are usually counted it is translated by *aon* with a singular noun; as *aon fear*, any man; *ófuit aon capall aigat?* or *ófuit capaill ari bít aigat?* Have you any horses?

The following phrases followed by a genitive case are used for "any" with objects that are not counted: *aon gréim*, for bread, butter, meat, &c.; *aon teoir*, for liquids; *aon gráinín*, for tea, sugar, &c.; *ófuit aon gréim feola aige?* Has he any meat?

(b) "Any of" followed by a noun is translated by *aon tuine te*, for persons; *aon ceann te*, for any kind of countable objects; *aon gréim te*, &c., as

above. An tóraí aon duine de na gearrait? Did you see any of the men? &c.

(c) "Any of" followed by a plural pronoun is translated by the phrases given in (b), but the preposition *as* is used instead of *de*; as—

Ní fuil aon ceann aca annaín. There is not any of them there.

Ní phair aon duine asaínn annaín ceana. Not one of us was here before.

### Distributive Adjectives.

201. *Sac*, each, every, as *sac* lá, every day: *uile* (before the noun), every; the definite article, or *sac*, must be used with *uile*; as *an uile fear*, every man. *Bi sac uile ceann aca tinn*. Every one of them was sick.

*Sac* ne, every other, every second; *sac* ne *tóraí*, every second word.

### 202. The Interrogative Adjectives.

*ca* or *cé*, what, as *cé* meáu. what amount?  
i.e., how much or how many?

*ca* h-áit, what place? *ca* h-áinnm aca oírt? What is your name? *ca* h-uair, what hour? when?

In English we say "what a man," "what a start," &c., but in Irish we say "what the man," "what the start," as *caróe an geit do bainfeadh ré airt!* What a fright he would give her! (lit. he would take out of her).

## CHAPTER IV.

## The Pronoun.

203. In Irish there are nine classes of Pronouns:— Personal, Reflexive, Prepositional, Relative, Demonstrative, Indefinite, Distributive, Interrogative, and Reciprocal pronouns. There are no Possessive pronouns in Irish.

## 204. Personal Pronouns.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1st pers.	mé, I	rinn, we
2nd pers.	tú, thou	rív, you
3rd pers.	{ré, he rí, she	ríao, they

Each of the above may take an **emphatic increase**, equivalent to the English suffix *self*.

## 205.

## Emphatic Forms of the Personal Pronouns.

1st pers.	míre, myself	rinne, ourselves
2nd pers.	túrás, thyself	rívre, yourselves
3rd pers.	{réirean, himself ríre, herself	ríao-rán, themselves

206. The word **réin** is added to the personal pronouns to form the **reflexive pronouns**; as **do buailear** mé **réin**, I struck myself.

The reflexive pronouns are as follows:—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
mé féin, myself	rinn féin, ourselves
tú féin, thyself	ríobh féin, yourselves
é féin, himself	isaothair féin, themselves
i féin, herself	

207. The above are also used as *emphatic pronouns*; as, *Cuaðamair a baile*, mé féin agus é féin. Both he and I went home.

208. The Personal Pronouns have no declension.

It has already been shown that *mo*, *oo*, *a*, etc., which are usually given as the genitive cases of the personal pronouns, are not pronouns, but adjectives; because they can never be used without a noun.

The compounds of the pronouns with the preposition *oo* (to) are usually given as the dative cases of the personal pronouns; but *agam*, *agat*, etc., or the compounds with any of the other prepositions in par. 216, are just as much the datives of the personal pronouns as *voom*, *vuit*, &c. Hence the *Irish personal pronouns have no declension*.

209. The Personal Pronouns have however *two forms*:—The conjunctive and the disjunctive. The conjunctive forms are used only immediately after a verb as its subject; in all other positions the disjunctive forms must be used. The disjunctive forms are also used after the verb *ir*.

The reason why these forms follow *is* that the word immediately after *is* is *predicate*,\* not *subject*; and it has just been stated that the conjunctive forms can be used only in immediate connection with a verb as its subject.

### Conjunctive Pronouns.

210. *mé, tú, ré, i, rinn, ib, iao.*

### Disjunctive Pronouns.

211. *mé, {tú, é, i, {rinn, {ib, iao,*  
*tú, é, i, {rinn, {ib, iao,*

In *mé, tú, tú*, the vowel is often shortened in Munster, when there is no stress or emphasis. It is shortened in *mé, ré, é, iao* and *ia* in Ulster, when there is no stress.

212. The disjunctive pronouns can be *nominatives* to verbs, but then they will be separated from the verbs: or they may be used in immediate connection with a verb as its object.

He is a man, *is fear é* (nominative).

He was the king, *was' é an rí é* (both nominatives).

This is smaller than that, *is luigé é reo ná é riú* (both nominatives).

I did not strike him, *níor bhuailear é* (accusative).

---

\* This statement will be explained later on. See par 589.

### The Neuter Pronoun *eas*.

213. The pronoun *eas* is most frequently used in replying to a question asked with any part of the verb *is* followed by an indefinite predicate.\* *Is aic breaig an tis e?* *Is eas go remm.* Isn't it a fine day? It is indeed. *An Sacraonac e?* *Hi h-eas.* Is he an Englishman? He is not.

This pronoun corresponds very much with the "unchangeable *le*" in French: as, Etes-vous sage? Oui, je *le* suis.

Whenever *is* in the question is followed by a pronoun, *eas* cannot be used in the reply. *An e Cormac an si?* *Hi h-e.* Is Cormac the king? He is not.

*Is eas* is usually contracted to *'reas* (shāh).

214. The phrase *is eas* ('reas) is often used to refer to a clause going before; as, *is Catanair na Maist, is eas, ciorair mé ariéir.* In Westport, it was, that I slept last night. *Nuair is mó an anfocair (anacair), is eas, is goire an cásair.* When the distress is greatest, then it is that help is nearest.

215. In Munster when the predicate is an indefinite noun it is usual to turn the whole sentence into an *eas*-phrase; as—It is a fine day. *Lá breaig, 'reas e.* He is a priest. *Sagart, 'reas e.* He was a slave. *Úaor, doib 'eas e.* Elsewhere these sentences would be, *is lá breaig e; is sagart e; ba úaor e.*

\* For "indefinite predicate", refer to par. 585.

## Prepositional Pronouns

or

## Pronominal Prepositions.

216. Fifteen of the simple prepositions combine with the disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns; and to these combinations is given the name of Prepositional Pronouns or Pronominal Prepositions.

All these compounds are very important. As five or six of them occur most frequently these will be given first, and the remainder, if so desired, may be left until the second reading of the book. The important combinations are those of the prepositions, *əs*, at; *əp*, on; *to*, to; *te*, with; *o*, from; and *cun*, towards.

All the combinations may take an emphatic suffix. One example will be given.

## SINGULAR. PLURAL.

217. *əs*, at or with.

1st pers. *əsam*, at me *əsainn*, at us

2nd pers. *əsat*, at thee *əsaib*, at you

3rd pers. *əse*, at him *əca*, at them

218. The combinations of *əs* with the emphatic suffixes.

1st pers. *əsamra*, at myself *əsainne*, at ourselves

2nd pers. *əsatra*, at thyself *əsaibre*, at yourselves

3rd pers. *əserean*, at himself *əcaran*, at themselves

*əciri*, at herself

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

## 219.

an, on.

1st pers.	oim, on me	oiminn, on us
2nd pers.	oit, on thee	oaitib, on you
3rd pers.	{ ait, on him uipri or uipci, on her	oata or oppa, on them

## 220.

to, to.

1st pers.	{ 'om, * to me 'am,	'ainn, to us
2nd pers.	'uit, to thee	'aoib, 'ib, to you
3rd pers.	{ 'o to him 'i, to her	'oib, to them

The initial **t** of these combinations and also those of **ve** are usually aspirated except after a word ending in one of the letters **v, n, t, l, r**.

## 221.

te, with.

tion, with me	tinn, with us
teat, with thee	tib, with you
teip, with him	
tei, } with her	teo, with them

## 222.

o, or ua, † from.

uaim, from me	uainn, from us
uait, „, thee	uaib, „, you
uaiti, „, him	
uaitci, „, her	uata, „, them

\* 'am (= 'om) is the literary and also the Ulster usage. The emphatic form is 'ompa, never 'omra, except in Connaught.

† ua is never used as a simple preposition.

‡ ua and uaie (= uaio) are also both literary and spoken forms.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

223. cun, towards.

cugam, \* towards me cugainn, towards us

cugat, } " thee cugairb, " you

cugao, } " him

cunge, " her cuga, " them

224. riomh, before.

riomham, before me riomhainn, before us

riomhat, } " thee riomhailb, " you

riomha, } " him

riomhig, " her riompa, " them

225. ar, out.

aram, out of me arainn, out of us

arat, } " thee arailb, " you

ar, " him

arci, " her arta, " them

226. i, in (or ann) in.

iannam, in me iannainn, in us

iannat, " thee iannailb, " you

ann, " him

inni, " her iannata, " them

227. ve, off, from.

viom, off or from me vinn, off or from us

vior, " thee vib, " you

ve, " him

vi, " her viob, " them

\* The *g* in these combinations is aspirated in Munster, except in cunge.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

228.      *τέ, τά, ταοι*, under.

τύμ, under me	τύνν, under us
τύτ,   , thee	τύνθ,   , you
ταοι,   , him	τύτα,   , them
τύτι,   , her	

229.      *τοιη*, between.

εατραμ, between me	εατραιν,      between us
εατρατ,   , thee	εατραιθ,   , you
τοιη ἐ,   , him	εατρητα}
τοιη ι,   , her (or εατρα)	, them

230.      *ταρ*, over or beyond.

ταριμ or τοριμ, over me	ταραιν or τοραιν, over us
ταριτ or τοριτ,   , thee	ταραιθ „ τοραιθ,   , you
ταριη,           , him	
ταριητι or τοριητι,   , her	ταρητα   , τορητα,   , them

231.      *τρέ*, through.

τριομ, through me	τρίνν, through us
τριοτ,   , thee	τρίθ,   , you
τρίνο,   , him	
τριτι,   , her	τριοτα,   , them

The *τ* of these combinations is often aspirated.232.      *υμ*, about.

υμαμ, about me	υμαιν, about us
υματ,   , thee	υμαιθ,   , you
υμε,   , him	
υμπι,   , her	υμπα,   , them

### The Relative Pronoun.

In Old Irish there was a relative particle used after prepositions, and also a compound relative, but no simple relative in the nominative and accusative cases. The modern relative, in these cases, has arisen from a mistaken idea about certain particles. Before the imperfect, the past, and conditional the particle *vo* should, strictly speaking, be used. Certain irregular but often used verbs had also an unaccented first syllable, as *atá*, *vo-deipim*, *vo-cim*, &c. These particles and syllables being unaccented were generally dropped at the beginning, but retained in the body, of a sentence, where the relative naturally occurs. Hence they were erroneously regarded as relative pronouns, from analogy with other languages.

In Modern Irish the relative particle may or may not be used in the nominative and accusative cases.

Although this is the origin of the modern relative nevertheless it is used as a *real relative* in modern Irish. Whether we call this a relative particle or a relative pronoun is a mere matter of choice. We prefer the first name.

There is a relative frequently met with in authors, viz.—*noc*, meaning who, which or that. This relative is not used in modern spoken Irish, in fact it seems never to have been used in the spoken language.

233. In modern Irish there are three simple relatives, the relative particles *Δ* and *go*, which signify *who*, *which*, or *that*; and the negative particle *nac*, signifying *who...not*, *which...not*, *that...not*.

The relative *go* is not found in literature, but it is so generally used in the spoken dialect of Munster that it must be regarded as a true relative. *go* is not used as the subject or object of a *verb*, its use is confined to the *prepositional (dative)* case.

There are also the compound relatives *pé*, *gibé*, *cibé*, *whoever*, *whosoever*, *whatever*, and *Δ* (causing *eclipsis*) *what*, *that which*, *all that*.

234. The relative particle *Δ* expressed or understood, causes aspiration; but when preceded by a preposition or when it means "all that," it causes *eclipsis*, as do *go* and *nac*.

An fear a buailim.	The man whom I strike.
An fear a buaileann mé.	The man who strikes me.
An buachaill nád mbeir ñ ag obair.	The boy who will not be at work.
An bean go ñfuit an bó aici.	The woman who has the cow.
A gcaitíim ñan lá.	All that I spend per day.
Sin a náib ann.	That's all that was there.
Do gsaírt a náib láitreach.	All who were present burst out laughing.
An ait 'na ñfuit ré.	The place in which he is.

**235. The relative a when governed by a preposition, or when it means "all that," unites with *ño*, the particle formerly used before the past tense of regular verbs, and becomes *ap*. This *ap* unites with the prepositions *do* (to) and *te* (with) and becomes *ðap* and *tep*.**

An caitceap ñan lá.	All that I spent per day.
An fear ðap gseallar mo leabhar. or	The man to whom I pro- mised my book.
An fear ap gseallar mo leabhar do.	mised my book.
An trplac leip buaileadó é.	The rod with which he was beaten.

**236. The pronouns cé and pé unite with *ño*, but only with the verb *ip*.**

Cé 'r ð'i péin? Who was she?  
pé 'r ð'é péin? Whoever he was

**237. Whenever the relative follows a superlative, or any phrase of the nature of a superlative, use *ða* (=oe + a). Before the past tense of regular verbs *ða* becomes *ðap* (=ða + ño)**

Óéairfad tuait gac uile níð ða ñfuit agam.  
I will give you *everything* that I have.  
I'p é rin an fear i'p aoirroe ðap buail liom náin.  
That is the *tallest* man that I have ever met.  
Ní maic leip aon níð ða otusgar do.  
He does not like a single thing I gave him.

## Demonstrative Pronouns.

238. The demonstrative pronouns are *ro* or *reо*, *this* ; *rin*, *rain*, *roin*, *ran*, *that* ; *ruо* or *riuо*, *that (yonder)*. The secondary forms *o* or *eo*, *in*, and *iuо* are very common in colloquial usage in Connaught and Munster.

These secondary forms have sometimes been written *fo*, *fin*, etc.

Ir fioр rin. That is true.

'Sead рan. The matter is so.

Tá re гo n-aинdeir aгat, You have it in a mess, so  
tá ran  
you have.

В' in i an ait. That was the place.

Deirim-re гaиp в' iuо e an feaрi uis. I say that that is the man  
for you.

В' in e críoc an rgeil. That was the end of the

An in e an boरga? Is that the box? [affair.

Hi h-oи an ait. This is not the place.

В' in e an buлcailt cuige. That was the boy for it.

239. When we are referring to a definite object these pronouns take the form *e reо*, *i reо*, *iaи ro*, *e rin*, *i rin*, *iaи ran*, etc. This is especially the case when the English words "this," "that," etc., are equivalent to "this one," "that one," etc.

Tog e rin. Lift (or take) that.

'Se reо an feaрi. This is the man.

Dob' e rin Seagán. That was John.

'Si rin Brigid. That's Brigid.

Cé h-iaи ro? Who are these?

An e riuо Tomáр. Is that (person) yonder  
Thomas?

Hi h-e, 're riuо e, or No; that's he.  
riuо e e.

'Sé *reo*=*ir* é *reo*; 'Sé *rin*=*ir* é *rin*, etc.

In the spoken language the phrases *ir* é *rin* é, *ir* é *riúd* é, etc., are very frequently contracted to *rin* é, *rin* i, *riúd* é, etc.

*Síud* é.

That is he.

*Síud* é *Taðg*.

Yonder is Thade.

*Sin* é *an carúp*.

That's the hammer.

The forms *riné*, *riní*, *riúd*, *riúd*, are also frequently used.

*Síudé atá ophm.*

That is what ails me.

*Siní an áit.*

That's the place.

*Síudí annro i.*

Here she is here.

*Siní i.*

That is she (*or* it).

*Síudé é.*

This is he (*or* it).

**240.** *Síud*, yonder, qualifies a pronoun; whilst *áu* qualifies a noun: as, *an feap* *áu*, yonder man; *a feap* *riúd*, yonder woman's husband.

### Indefinite Pronouns.

**241.** The principal indefinite pronouns are—

*cáic* (gen. *cáic*), all, everybody, everyone else.

*uile*, all.

*éinne*, *éinneac* (*oin'me*), anybody.

The following are *nouns*, but they are used to translate English indefinite pronouns, hence we give them here:—

*duine ari bit*, anyone at all.

*cúro...cúro eile*, some...others

*beagán*, a few.

An t-áinig éinne annró? Did anyone come here?

"Cia h-é do báid an macraid?" ar cás. "Who is he who drowned the youths?" said all.

Cé meúr uball agat? (or An 'mó uball agat?) Tá beagán agam. How many apples have you? I have a few.

Uile thíb. To them all.

Do-geibimír uile an báir. We all die.

Do cuadair ro uile reaca aithneig ríseáile. All these went past like a shadow.

### Distributive Pronouns.

**242.** The distributive pronouns are:—gáé, each; gáé uile, everyone; gáé aon, each one, everyone; ceáctar, either. 'Cuile is a contraction for gáé uile. Ni fuit ceáctar aca agam, I have not either of them.

Bíodh a fíor ag gáé aon. Let each one know.

Óir bionn (bí) pioc Dé leir (fir) gáé h-aon cailleach a neáct. For the anger of God is on each one who violates His law.

**N.B.**—The tendency in present-day usage is to employ distributive adjectives followed by appropriate nouns rather than distributive pronouns: *e.g.* Everyone went home. Do cuaird gáé uile duine a báile.

## Interrogative Pronouns.

243. The chief interrogative pronouns are:—cis or cé, who, which; cao, creuo, or cairé, what; cé or ceuil (cia nu), what; cia teir, whose; cia aca (cioca), which of them. cé (or cia) asai, which of you.

Cé pinne é rin? Who did that?

Cao ata asat? What have you?

Cao é rin asat? What is that you have?

Cairé ata opt? } What ails you?  
Cao ta opt? }

Cé aca ir feairi? } Which of them is the better?  
Cioca ir feairi? }

Cia an feair? Which or what man?

Cia na ri? Which men?

Cia an luac? What price?

Cairé an nu é rin? What is that?

Cé teir an teab? Whose is the book?

244. Notice in the last sentence the peculiar position of the words. The interrogative pronoun always comes first in an Irish sentence, even when it is governed by a preposition in English. In Irish we do not say "With whom (is) the book?" but "Who with him (is) the book?"

Further examples of the same construction:—

Cé leir é ro? Whose is this?

Cé aige an teabhar? Who has the book?

A Seánán, tóicfaidh tú go Gaillim? Cao cuige? John, will you come to Galway? What for?

Cia leir bhfuil tú cormaile? Whom are you like?

We may also say, Cia bhfuil tú cormaile leir?

Notice that the adjective **cormail**, *like*, takes **le**, *with*; not **ro**, *to*.

**245. N.B.**—The interrogative pronouns are always nominative case in an Irish sentence. In such a sentence as, **Cia** **bhuaileadh** **ar**? Whom did they strike? **Cia** is nominative case to **is** understood, whilst the suppressed relative is the object of **bhuaileadh**. In **Cia leir**, **cao cuige**, &c., **leir** and **cuige** are prepositional pronouns, not simple prepositions.

### Reciprocal Pronoun.

**246.** The reciprocal pronoun in Irish is **a céile**,\* meaning *each other*, *one another*. **Cuir** **Fionn** **a láimh** **i láimh** **a céile**, Finn put their hands in the hands of one another. **Ro** **rsar** **Oscar** **agus** **Diarmuid** **le** **n-a céile**. Oscar and Diarmuid separated from each other (lit. “separated with each other”). **Bhuaileadh** **ar** **a céile**. They struck each other.

\* Literally, *his fellow*.

### Phrases containing the Reciprocal Pronoun.

ó céile,\* from each other, separated or asunder.

le céile,† together.

mar a céile, like each other, alike.

cpí n-a céile, } confused, without any order.  
cpé n-a céile, }

oipeas le céile, each as much as the other.

i nuaireá n-a céile, one after the other, in succession.

ar gac fáras i n-a céile, out of one desert into another

---

## CHAPTER V.

---

### THE VERB.

---

#### Conjugations.

247. In Irish there are two conjugations of regular verbs. They are distinguished by the formation of the future stem. All verbs of the first conjugation form the first person singular of the future simple in -fao or -feao, whilst verbs of the second conjugation form the same part in -ófao or -eofao.

---

\* ó céile, = ó n-a céile.

† le céile, = le n-a céile. This last form is often used and explains the aspiration in le céile.

### Forms of Conjugation.

**248.** Every Irish verb, with the single exception of *is*, has three forms of conjugation:—The **Synthetic**, the **Analytic**, and the **Autonomous**.

**249.** The **synthetic**, or **pronominal form**, is that in which the persons are expressed by means of terminations or inflections. All the persons, singular and plural, with the single exception of the third person singular, have synthetic forms in practically every tense. The third person singular can never have its nominative contained in the verb-ending or termination.

The following example is the present tense synthetic form of the verb *mot*, *praise*:—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
<i>motaim</i> , I praise.	<i>motaimi</i> , we praise.
<i>motair</i> , thou praisest.	<i>motaoi</i> , you praise.
<i>motann ré</i> , he praises.	<i>motaró</i> , they praise.

**250.** In the **analytic form** of conjugation the persons are not expressed by inflection; the form of the verb remains the same throughout the tense and the persons are expressed by the pronouns *placed after the verb*. The form of the verb in the third person singular of the above example is the form the verb has in the analytic form of the present tense.

The analytic form in every tense has identically the same form as the third person singular of that tense.

**N.B.**—The analytic form is generally employed in asking questions.

The following is the analytic form of the present tense of *mol* :—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
<i>molaim</i> , I praise.	<i>molann rinn</i> , we praise.
<i>molann tú</i> , thou praisest.	<i>molann rib</i> , you praise.
<i>molann ré</i> , he praises.	<i>molann riad</i> , they praise

The analytic form is used in all the tenses, but in some of the tenses it is rarely, if ever, found in some of the persons: for instance, it is not found in the first person singular above. As the analytic form presents no difficulty, it will not be given in the regular table of conjugations.

**251.** We are indebted to the Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P., for the following explanation of the **Autonomous Form** of conjugation :—

“This third form—*the Autonomous*—has every one of the moods and tenses, but in each tense it *has only one person*, and that person is only *implied*. It is really a personality, but it is not a specific personality. It is only a general, undefined personality.

“This third form of an Irish verb has some very unique powers. . . . I shall illustrate one. An English verb cannot of itself make complete sense alone; this form of an Irish verb can. For instance, ‘*Duairteap*’ is a complete sentence. It means, ‘A beating is being administered,’ or, ‘Somebody is striking.’ Irish grammarians have imagined that this

form of the verb is passive voice. No, it is not passive voice, for it has a passive of its own; and, again, all intransitive verbs (even the verb *tá*) possesses this form of conjugation. The nearest equivalents in sense and use to this Irish form are the German ‘*mann*’ and the French ‘*on*’ with the third person singular of the verb.”—*Gaelic Journal*.

The usual translation of the French phrase “*on dit*” is, “*It is said.*” “*Is said*” is certainly passive voice in English, but it does not follow that “*dit*” is passive voice in French. The same remark holds with regard to the Irish phrase “*buaileann an gaoth*,” which is usually translated, “*The dog is struck.*” *Buaileann* is not passive voice; it is *active voice, autonomous form*, and *gaoth* is its object in the *accusative case*. The literal translation of the phrase is, “*Somebody strikes the dog.*” The passive voice of *buaileann*, *someone strikes*, is *tátar buaile*, *someone is struck*.

**252.** As this is the first grammar that has adopted the term “*Autonomous form of the Verb*,” we think it advisable to state that the form of the verb which we give as the *Autonomous form* is given in other Irish grammars as the *passive voice*. A fuller treatment of the Autonomous Verb will be found at the end of the book, where we endeavour to show that in *modern Irish*, at least, this form of the verb is *active voice*. The name by which this form of the verb ought to be called is not merely a matter of terms, for on it de-

pends the case of the following noun or pronoun : i.e., whether such noun or pronoun is the *subject* or *object* of the verb.

As *all* Irish scholars have not accepted the *Autonomous form* of the verb, since it appears that formerly, at least, the verb was not Autonomous, being inflected for the plural number, it has been suggested that both names be retained for the present. In the first edition of this grammar the term "*Indefinite*" was given to this form, but as the name "*Autonomous*," which means *possessing the power of self government*, is far more expressive, it has been adopted instead of "*Indefinite*."

As the Autonomous form has only one inflection for each tense, this inflection is given immediately after each tense in the tables of conjugation.

### MOODS AND TENSES.

**253.** Verbs have three moods, the **Imperative**, the **Indicative**, and the **Subjunctive**.

Some grammars add a fourth mood, the Conditional; and some omit the Subjunctive. The Conditional form, however, is always either Indicative or Subjunctive in meaning, and is here classed as a tense under the Indicative Mood.

The **Imperative** has only one tense, the Present. Its use corresponds to that of the Imperative in English.

The **Indicative Mood** has five tenses, the Present, the Imperfect, the Past, the Future, and the Conditional.

The **Present Tense** corresponds to the English Present, and like it usually denotes *habitual action*.

The so-called Consuetudinal or Habitual Present—*i.e.*, the third person singular ending in -ann—in no way differs from the other parts of the Present in regard to time. The verb bí, however, has a distinct Present, bím, denoting habitual action. In English the Present—*e.g.*, *I write*—generally denotes habitual action. *Present action* is usually signified by a compound tense, *I am writing*. So in Irish the Present, r̄sgnioθaim, denotes *habitual action*, and present action is denoted by the compound tense, t̄áim as r̄sgnioθaó. However, as in English, the Present Tense of certain verbs, especially those relating to the *senses* or the *mind*, denote *present* as well as *habitual action*—*e.g.*, cluinnim, *I hear*; c̄reidim, *I believe*.

The **Imperfect Tense** is also called the *Habitual* or *Consuetudinal Past*. It denotes habitual action in past time; as, do r̄sgnioθainn, *I used to write*.

The **Past Tense** is also called the *Perfect* and the *Preterite*. It corresponds to the Past Tense in English; as, do r̄sgnioθar, *I wrote*.

Continuous action in past time is denoted by a compound tense, as in English—*e.g.*, do t̄ior as r̄sgnioθaó, *I was writing*.

The **Future Tense** corresponds to the Future in English: as r̄sgnioθfaó, *I shall write*.

The **Conditional** corresponds to the Compound Tense with “*should*” or “*would*” in English: as do r̄sgnioθfa, *thou wouldest write*.

The Conditional is also called the **Secondary Future**, because it denotes a future act regarded in the past: as, Aonúbait ré go r̄sgnioθfaó ré. He said that he would write.

In the **SubJunctive Mood** there are only two Tenses, the Present and the Past. This mood is used principally to express a wish, and also after certain conjunctions. See par. 550, &c.

### Active Voice, Ordinary Form.

254. Each Tense has the following forms:—

1. The action is merely stated, as— .

*Buaileann Seagán an cláir,*  
John strikes the table.

2. The action is represented as in progress, as—

*Tá Seagán ag buaileadh an cláir,*  
John is striking the table.

3. The action as represented as about to happen—

*Tá Seagán { cum } an cláir do buaileadh,*  
John is about (is going) to strike the table.

4. The action is represented as completed, as—

*Tá Seagán d'éisigh an cláir do buaileadh,*  
John has just struck the table.

### Active Voice, Autonomous Form.

255. Each Tense has the following forms, corresponding exactly to those given in the preceding paragraph.

1. *Buaileann an cláir,*

Someone strikes the table.

2. Tátarí ag bualaodh an cláir,  
Someone is striking the table.

3. Tátarí { cum  
ap. tī } an cláir do bualaodh,  
Someone is about to strike the table.

4. Tátarí o' éir an cláir do bualaodh,  
Someone has just struck the table.

### 256. Passive Voice, Ordinary Form.

1. (This form is supplied by the Autonomous Active.)

2. Tá an cláir oá (or gá) bualaodh,  
The table is being struck.

3. Tá an cláir { cum  
ap. tī } a buaile,  
The table is about to be struck.

4. Tá an cláir buaile,  
The table has (just) been struck.

### 257. Passive Voice, Autonomous Form.

1. Tátarí buaile,  
Someone is struck.

2. Tátarí fé bualaodh.  
Someone is being struck.

3. Tátarí { cum  
ap. tī } òeit buaile,  
Someone is about to be struck

4. Tátarí buaile,  
Someone has (just) been struck

**258. The Principal Parts of an Irish Verb are—**

- (1) The 2nd sing. of the Imperative Mood.
- (2) The 1st sing. of the Future Simple.
- (3) The Past Participle (also called the Verbal Adjective).
- (4) The Verbal Noun.

(a) The **Imperative** 2nd. pers. sing. gives the stem of the verb from which most of the other tenses and persons are formed.

(b) The **Future** tells to what conjugation (first or second) the verb belongs, and gives the stem for the Conditional.

(c) The **Past Participle** shows whether *t* is aspirated or unaspirated in the following persons, which are formed from the past participle—*i.e.*:

Present, *2nd plural.*

Imperfect, *2nd singular.*

**Autonomous.**

*Imperative, Present, and Imperfect.*

Verbal noun.

*Gen. sing. and nom. plural.*

(d) With the Verbal Noun are formed the compound tenses.

The four following types include all verbs belonging to the first conjugation:—

## 259.

## Principal Parts.

Type.	Imper.	Future.	P. Participle.	Verbal Noun.	Meaning.
1.	mot	motþa	motæ	motæð	praise
2.	neub	neubþa	neubæ	neubæð	burst or tear
3.	buail	buailþa	buailæ	buailæð	strike
4.	fóir	fóirþa	fóiræ	fóiræðin	help, succour

**N.B.**—No notice need be taken of the variation in form of verbal nouns, as they cannot be reduced to any rule, but must be learned for each verb. The ending *æð* or *eað* is that most frequently found, but there are numerous other endings. (See pars. 315 and 316).

**260.** (1) and (2) are the types for all verbs of the first conjugation whose stem ends in a broad consonant; whilst (3) and (4) are the types for the verbs of the same conjugation whose stem ends in a slender consonant.

As the conjugations of types (2) and (4) are identical with those of types (1) and (3) respectively, except the aspiration of the *t* in the endings mentioned in par. 258 (c), we do not think it necessary to conjugate in full the four types. We shall give the forms in modern use of the verbs *mot* and *buail*, and then give a rule which regulates the aspiration of *t* in the Past Participle. (See par. 282).

## FIRST CONJUGATION.

In the following table the forms marked with an asterisk are not generally used in the analytic form. The forms in square brackets were used in early modern Irish, and are frequently met with in books. Alternative terminations are given in round brackets.

## 261. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

## SINGULAR.

1st. —

2nd. *mot*, praise thou*buail*, strike thou3rd. *moladó ré*, let him praise*buailleadó ré*

## PLURAL.

1.  $\begin{cases} \text{molaimir} \quad (-amuir) \\ \text{molam} \end{cases}$  let us  $\begin{cases} \text{buailimisr} \quad (\text{eamuir}) \\ \text{buaitam} \end{cases}$

2. *molairó*, praise (you) *buailiró*

3.  $\begin{cases} \text{molairisr}, \\ \text{moladaoisr}, \end{cases}$  let them praise *buailirisr*

## Autonomous.

*molcap**buaillecap*

The negative particle for this mood is *na*.

## 262. INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present Tense.

SING. 1. \**molaim*, I praise \**buailim*, I strike

2. *molair*, &c. *buailir*

3. *molanna ré* *buailleannc ré*

PLUR. 1. *molaimisr* (*amuir*) *buailimisr* (-*imisr*)

2. *molann ribb* *buailleann ribd*

3. *molairó* *buailiró*

*a*[*molairó*]*b*[*moladaoisr*]*c*[*buailiró*]*d*[*buailisr*]

<b>Autonomous.</b> Moltar	buailear
<b>Relative form.</b> Moltar	buailear
<b>Negative.</b> Ni molaim,	I do not praise.
„ Ni buailear,	You do not strike.
<b>Interrogative.</b> An molann ré?	Does he praise?
„ An mbuaileim?	Do I strike?
<b>Neg. Interrog.</b> Nac molair?	Do they not praise?
„ Nac mbuaileann ré?	Does he not strike?

### 263. Imperfect Tense.

SING. 1. *molainn,	I used to praise	*buaileann
2. *molta, &c.		*buailead
3. molao ré		buailead ré
PLUR. 1. molaimir (-amuir)		buaileimir (or imir)
2. molao rib		buailead rib
3. { molairoir molaoisoir		buaileisoir
<b>Autonomous.</b> Moltao,		buaileti.
<b>Negative.</b> Ni molainn,	I used not praise.	
„ Ni buailead ré,	He used not strike.	
<b>Interrogative.</b> An molta?	Used you praise?	
„ An mbuaileoir?	Used they strike?	
<b>Neg. Interrog.</b> Nac molainn?	Used I not praise?	
„ Nac mbuaileann?	Used I not strike?	

### 264. Past Tense.

SING. 1. molar, I praised	buailear
2. molair	buailear
3. mol ré	buailear ré

PLUR. 1.	molamap	bualeamap
2.	molabap	bualeabap
3.	moladap	bualeadap
<b>Autonomous.</b>	<b>Molad</b>	<b>bualead</b>
<b>Negative.</b>	ñiop molap,	I did not praise.
„	ñiop buail ré,	He did not strike.
<b>Interrogative.</b>	Ap molap?	Did you praise?
„	Ap bualeap?	Did I strike?
<b>Neg. Interrog.</b>	ñáp mol ré?	Did he not praise?
„	ñáp bualeamap?	Did we not strike?

## 265. Future Tense.

SING. 1.	molpav, I shall praise	buailpead
2.	molpap, thou wilt praise	buailfir
3.	molpado ré, &c.	buailfirid ré
PLUR. 1.	molpaimio (-amuro)	buailfirimio (imiro)
2.	molpado riða	buailfirid riðb
3.	molpado	buailfirio
<b>Relative form.</b>	<b>molpav</b>	<b>buailpead</b>
<b>Autonomous.</b>	<b>Molpav</b>	<b>buailpead</b>
<b>Negative.</b>	ñi molpav,	I shall not praise.
„	ñi buailfirid ré,	He will not strike.
<b>Interrogative.</b>	Ap molpado ré?	Will he praise?
„	Ap mbuailpead?	Shall I strike?
<b>Neg. Interrog.</b>	ñác molpap?	Will you not praise?
„	ñác mbuailfirio?	Will they not strike?

a[molpaví]

c[molpadoam]

b[buailfirí]

d[buailfiríðeap]

## 266. Conditional or Secondary Future.

SING.	1. molfainn, I would praise	buailfínn
	2. molfa	buailfeda
	3. molfað ré	buailfeadð ré
PLUR.	1. molfaimír (famuir)	buailfimír (fimír)
	2. molfað ríð	buailfeadð ríð
	3. { molfaidír molfaðaoir	buailfioir
Autonomous.	molfaí	buailfi
Negative.	Ní molfainn,	I would not praise.
"	Ní buailfeda,	You would not strike
Interrogative.	An molfa,	Would you praise?
"	An mbuailfeadð ré,	Would he strike?
Neg. Interrog.	Náe molfað ré?	Would he not praise?
"	Náe mbuailfimír?	Would we not strike?

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## 267. Present Tense.

SING.	1. molad	buailead
	2. molair	buailiŋ
	3. molairð ré	buailið ré
PLUR.	1. molaimio (-amuir)	buailimio (-imio)
	2. molairð ríða	buailið ríð
	3. molairð	buailið
Autonomous.	moltar	buailtear

The negative particle is ná, which always aspirates when possible.

## 268.

## Past Tense.

SING.	1. moláinn	buailinn
	2. moládá	buailtead
	3. moladó ré	buaileadó ré
PLUR.	1. molaimir (amuir)	buailimír (-imír)
	2. moladó rið	buaileadó rið
	3. { molairír moladairír	buailairír
Autonomous.	moltaoi	buailtí
Verbal Noun.	moladó	buailadó
Verbal Adj.	molta	buailte

## NOTES ON THE MOODS AND TENSES.

## The Present Tenses.

269. The Present Tense is always formed by adding *aim*, *air*, &c., to the stem when the last vowel is broad; if the last vowel is slender add *im*, *ir*, *eann*, &c. The last syllable of the first person plural is often pronounced rapidly—*e.g.*, molamuro (mul'-a-mwid), cperidimiro (k'red'imid); but in the South of Ireland this syllable is lengthened, molaimiro (mul'-a-meed), cperidimiro (k'red'-imeed). Verbs of more than one syllable ending in *ig* add *im*, not *imiro*, in the first person plural of this tense.

270. In Ulster the ending *muro* of the first person plural is very often separated from the verb, and used instead of the pronoun *inn* as Connac *muro* é. We saw him; Connac ré *muro*. He saw us. On no account should this corruption be imitated by the student.

271. The *old* form of the third person singular ended in *aró* or *ro*, and the analytic forms *found in books*, and sometimes in the northern dialect, are got from this form: as *molaró rinn*, we praise.

272. The analytic form is not usually found in the first person singular of this tense, nor is the synthetic form often used in the second person plural.

### The Imperfect Tense.

273. The initial consonant of this tense is usually aspirated in the active voice, when possible.

The termination *aró* or *earó* in the 3rd sing. of this tense, as also in the Imperative and Conditional, is pronounced *ac*, or *an*.

274. When none of the particles *ni*, *an*, *nac*, &c., precede the Imperfect Tense, *oo* may be used before it. This *oo* may be omitted except when the verb begins with a vowel or *p*. The compound particles, *nior*, *ar*, *nár*, *gúr*, *cár*, &c., can *never* be used with the Imperfect Tense.

275. Whenever the word “*would*” is used in English to describe what used to take place, the Imperfect Tense, not the Conditional, is used in Irish, as—

He *would* often say to me. *Ír minic aorítearó ré liom.*

### The Past Tense.

276. In the Past Tense active voice the initial consonant of the verb is aspirated. The remark which

has just been made with regard to the use of *vo* before the Imperfect Tense applies also to the Past Tense.

In the Autonomous form *vo* does not aspirate, but prefixes *n* to vowels.

277. With the exception of the aspiration of the initial consonant, the third person singular of this tense is exactly the same as the second person singular of the Imperative (*i.e.*, the stem of the verb).

278. The particle formerly used before the Past Tense was *no*. It is now no longer used by itself, but it occurs in combination with other particles.

The most important of these compounds are:—

(1) *Δη*, whether (*an+no*). *Δηθυαιτρέ?* Did he strike?

(2) *Συ*, that (*so+no*). *Τειρ ρέ Συ θυαιτεαρέ.* He says that I struck him.

(3) *Caη*, where (*ca+no*). *Caη θεαννυισιρ αν θαπαλ?* Where did you buy the horse?

(4) *Μυνη*, unless (*mun+no*). *Μυνηθυαιτιν ρέ, ουλλαλ?* he struck.

(5) *Πιοη*, not (*ni+no*). *Πιοη θηειο ρέ.* He did not believe.

(6) *Πάη* or *παθη*, whether ...not. *Πάη θηειο ρέ?* Did he not believe?

(7) **Doñ**, to whom (do, to + **An fean doñ geallar mo a+po**). **An fean doñ geallar mo leabhar.** The man to whom I promised my book.

(8) **Leñ**, by or with which (le + a + po). **An marde leñ buileadh é,** The stick with which they beat him (or he was beaten).

**279. The compounds of po aspirate.** These compounds are used with the Past Tense of all verbs except the following:—**raib**, was; **cus**, gave or brought; **rus**, bore; **facia**, saw; **cáinig**, came; **ruair**, found, got; **deacaird**, went; **deárla**, made or did.

The compounds of po are used in some places before **cus** and **cáinig**.

**N.B.**—**Deacaird** and **deárla** are used instead of **cuaird** and **runne** after negative and interrogative particles. Instead of **deacaird** and **deárla**, **cuaird** and **dein** (ðin) are used in Munster.

### The Future Tense and Conditional.

**280.** All the inflections of the Future and Conditional in the first conjugation begin with the letter **r**, which in the spoken language is generally pronounced like “h.” This “h” sound combines with the letters **v**, **o** and **s** (whenever the stem ends in these) changing them in sound into **p**, **t**, **c**, respectively.

créitíofeo is usually pronounced k'ret'-udh

fráisfeo „ „ „ fau'-kudh

rgliobfeo „ „ „ shgree-pudh

**N.B.**—f is sounded in the second sing. Conditional active and in the Autonomous form.

**281.** The particle oo, causing aspiration, may be used before the Conditional when no other particle precedes it.

Note that the terminations of the Imperative Mood, the Imperfect Tense, and the Conditional are almost the same, excepting the letter f of the latter.

**Rule for the Aspiration of t of Past Participles.**

**282.** The t of the past participle is generally aspirated except after the letters o, n, t, l, s, t̄, ó, c, and (in verbs of one syllable) ſ.

There is a great tendency in the spoken language not to aspirate the t in all verb inflexions after consonants: e.g., tugta, tugtar, deirtear, etc.

**283.** This participle cannot be used like the English participle to express action. He was praised is generally molad é; very seldom bí ré molta. The Irish participle has always the force of an adjective denoting the complete state, never the force of an action in progress.

**284.** After if the Past Participle denotes what is proper or necessary: as, ní molta duit é. He is not to be praised by you. This form, called the **Participle of Necessity**, should probably be regarded as distinct

from the ordinary past participle, as it may occur in verbs which have no past participle, *e.g.* :—

“*Ír deimhn nád ӯpuit dhuine nád beitte ód ar coiméad opm.*” “It is certain that there is no person who will not have to be on his guard against me.” (Letter of Seán Ó Néill, 1561.) “*Tuiscear ar an rseul, nád beitte do nead dul i n-eudócasar.*” It may hence be learned that *it is not proper* for anyone to fall into despair. *Ní beitte ag a rfeunad* (or simply, *ní rfeunta*). It must not be denied. Here *beitte* is the *Participle of Necessity* of the verb *bi*.

**285. Derivative Participles.**

ion-molta	in-peubta	ion-ӯuailte	ion-fóirte
ro-molta	ro-peubta	ro-ӯuailte	ro-fóirte
do-molta	do-peubta	do-ӯuailte	do-fóirte

**286.** The prefix *ion-* or *in-* denotes what *is proper or fit to be done*: as *ion-molta*, fit to be praised, deserving of praise.

The prefix *ro-* denotes what *is possible or easy to do*: as *ro-peubta*, capable of being burst, easy to burst.

**287.** The prefix *do-* denotes what *is impossible or difficult to do*: as *do-ӯuailte*, incapable of being struck, hard to strike.

**288.** These derivative participles seem to be formed rather from the *genitive of the verbal noun* than from the participle: as *fagáil*, finding.

*ro-fagáila*, easily found. *do-fagáila*, hard to find.

## 289. Declension of Verbal Noun.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom.		
Acc. } molatō	molta	
Gen.	molta	molatō (molta)
Dat.	molatō	moltaid
Nom. }		
Acc. } buatō	buaile	
Gen.	buaile	bualetō (buaile)
Dat.	bualetō	buaileid

290. Many verbal nouns are seldom or never used in the plural. As a rule the genitive singular of the verbal noun is identical in form with the past participle; but many verbal nouns are declined like ordinary nouns: nearly all those ending in *act*, *an*, and *amain* belong to the 3rd declension—*e.g.*, *gabail*, act of taking; gen., *gabala*: *rit*, running; gen. *peata*: *teanamain*, act of following; gen. *teanamina*: *riubal*, act or walking; gen. *riubail*: *fár*, act of growing; gen. *fáir*, &c.

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

291. The second conjugation comprises two classes of verbs—(1) derived verbs in *is* or *uis*; and (2) syncopated verbs.

292. Syncopated verbs are those in which the vowel in the final syllable of the stem is omitted when any termination *commencing with a vowel* is added: as *labhair*, *speak*; *labhairim* (not *labhairim*), *I speak*. Verbs of more than one syllable whose stem ends in *il*, *in*, *ir*, *ing*, belong to this class.

### VERBS IN *is* (-uis).

#### 293. Principal Parts.

Type.	Imper.	Future.	Past Participle.	V. Noun.	Meaning.
1.	<i>baileis</i>	<i>baileócas</i>	<i>baileis</i>	<i>baileis</i>	gather
2.	<i>ceannuis</i>	<i>ceannócas</i>	<i>ceannuis</i>	<i>ceannac</i>	buy

294. Except in the *Future* and *Conditional*, all verbs in *is* and *uis* are conjugated like *buail* (first conjugation), except that the *t* is aspirated in all terminations beginning with that letter. It is, therefore, necessary to give only the *Future* and *Conditional* in full.

#### 295. Future.

##### SINGULAR.

1. <i>baileócas</i> ,	I shall gather.	<i>ceannócas</i> ,	I shall buy
2. <i>baileócas</i> ,		<i>ceannócas</i> ,	
3. <i>baileócas</i> <i>re</i> ,		<i>ceannócas</i> <i>re</i> .	

##### PLURAL.

1. <i>baileócaimis</i> (-camuris),		<i>ceannócaimis</i> (-camuris).
2. <i>baileócas</i> <i>rib</i> ,		<i>ceannócas</i> <i>rib</i> .
3. <i>baileócas</i> ,		<i>ceannócas</i> .

**Relative.** *baileócas*.

*ceannócas*.

**Autonomous.** *baileóctar*

*ceannóctar*.

## 296.

## Conditional.

## SINGULAR.

1. **baileoscáinn**, I would gather.      **ceannoscáinn**.  
 2. **baileoscéál**,  
 3. **baileoscád ré**,

## PLURAL.

1. **baileoscáimír**  
     (-amuir)  
 2. **baileoscád ríb**,  
 3. { **baileoscáidír**  
     { **baileoscádailír**

**ceannoscáimír**  
     (-amuir).

**ceannoscád ríb**.  
**ceannoscáidír**  
**ceannoscádailír**

**Autonomous.** **baileoscéálai**      **ceannoscéálai**

297. In early modern usage, when the stem ended in *-uis*, preceded by *o*, *n*, *τ*, *l*, or *r*, these consonants were usually attenuated in the Future and Conditional: as *άιρουις*, *raise*, future *άιρυεόςαν*; *ραυις*, *soil*, future *ραιεόςαν*; but nowadays *άρροόςαν*, *ραλόςαν*, &c., are the forms used.

## Syncopated Verbs.

298. The personal endings of syncopated verbs vary somewhat according as the *consonant commencing the last syllable of the stem* is broad or slender.

Type (1). Stems in which the last syllable *commences with a broad consonant*,\* as *μαργαίρ* (*rógaír*), *proclaim*.

Type (2). Stems in which the last syllable *commences with a slender consonant*, as *coigil*, *spare*.

\* A few of these take *re* in past participle; as *οργαίτ*, *open*, *οργαίτε*; *ceangáit*, *bind*, *ceangáitε*. The parts of these verbs [258 c.] which are formed from the past participle will, of course, have slender terminations. e.g., *ο'οργαίτεά*, *you used to open*.

299. In early modern usage the Future is formed by lengthening the vowel sound of the last syllable of the stem from *ai* or *i* to *eo*. in the case of Type 1 the broad consonant which commences the final syllable of the stem must be made slender. Examples: *imnir*, *inneoiratō*, *I shall tell*; *vibipi*, *víbeoirair*, *you will banish*; *imipi*, *imeoiratō ré*, *he will play*; *coigil*, *coigeolatō*, *I shall spare*; *fuagair*, *fuagieoratō*, *they will proclaim*; *v'fuagieoratō ré*, *he would proclaim*; *covalt*, *coveolatō*, *I shall sleep*; *coveolainn*, *I would sleep*.

300. In the present-day usage the Future stem is formed as if the verb ended in *ig* or *uig*: by adding *-oc* in Type 1 and *-eooc* in Type 2.

### 801. Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	V. Noun.
-------------	---------	-------------	----------

Type (1). *fuagair* *fuagirocātō* *fuagairtā* *fuagira(ō)*

### 302.

Type (2). *coigil* *coigleocātō* *coigilte* *coigilt*

### 803. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SING. 1. —

2. <i>fuagair</i> , proclaim	<i>coigil</i> , spare
3. <i>fuagiratō ré</i>	<i>coigleatō ré</i>

PLUR. 1. *fuagiraimir*

*coiglimir*

2. *fuagiratō*

*coiglitō*

3. *fuagiratōir* (-*atadoir*)

*coiglitōir*

Autonomous. *fuagairtar*

*coigiltear*

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## 304. Present Tense.

SING.	1. բացրամ, I proclaim	coiglim, I spare
	2. բացրար	coiglir
	3. բացրանք թէ	coigleann <sup>c</sup> thé
PLUR.	1. բացրամի՛	coiglimi՛
	2. բացրանք թի՛	coigleann <sup>c</sup> thib'
	3. բացրած	coiglit
Relative.	բացրար	coiglear
Autonomous.	բացրարէար	coigleara

## 305. Imperfect Tense.

SING.	1. ո'բացրանն	coiglenn
	2. ո'բացրարէա	coiglcea
	3. ո'բացրած թէ	coigleas <sup>c</sup> thé
PLUR.	1. ո'բացրամի՛	coiglimi՛
	2. ո'բացրած թի՛	coigleas <sup>c</sup> thib'
	3. ո'բացրածոր (-ոծոր)	coiglitoir
Autonomous.	բացրարէաօլ	coiglceol

## 306. Past Tense.

SING.	1. ո'բացրար	coiglear
	2. ո'բացրարտ	coiglir
	3. ո'բացրար թէ	coiglit thé
PLUR.	1. ո'բացրամար	coigleamap
	2. ո'բացրանար	coigleannap
	3. ո'բացրածար	coigleasap
Autonomous.	բացրած	coigleas

a[բացրար]

b[բացրարէաօլ]

c[coiglceol]

d[coiglceol]

307.

## Future Tense.

## SINGULAR.

1. բացրօշատ coigleօշատ  
 2. բացրօշալի coigleօշալի  
 3. բացրօշալո թե coigleօշալո թե

## PLURAL.

1. բացրօշալմիո coigleօշալմիո  
 2. բացրօշալո թիօ coigleօշալո թիօ  
 3. բացրօշալո coigleօշալո

Relative Form. բացրօշար

coigleօշար

Autonomous. բացրօշելի

coigleօշելի

308.

## Conditional.

SING. 1. ո'բացրօշալն coigleօշալն  
 2. ո'բացրօշելա coigleօշելա  
 3. ո'բացրօշալ թե coigleօշալ թե  
 PLUR. 1. ո'բացրօշալմիր coigleօշալմիր  
 2. ո'բացրօշալո թիօ coigleօշալո թիօ  
 3. ո'բացրօշալուր coigleօշալուր  
 Autonomous. բացրօշելաi coigleօշելաi

309.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## Present Tense.

SING. 1. բացրած coigleծ  
 2. բացրալի coigleլի  
 3. բացրալո թե coigleլո թե  
 PLUR. 1. բացրալմիո coigleլմիո  
 2. բացրալո թիօ coigleլո թիօ  
 3. բացրալո coigleլո  
 Autonomous. բացրալելի coigleլելի

## 310. Past Tense.

SING.	1. բացրան	coiglunn
	2. բացրէն	coiglited
	3. բացրան թէ	coigleand թէ
PLUR.	1. բացրամիր	coiglimir
	2. բացրան րին	coigleand րին
	3. բացրամօր	coiglimor

Autonomous, բացրէօն  coigliti

## 311. Past Participle and Participle of Necessity.

բացրէն	coiglute
--------	----------

## 312. Compound Participles.

տո-բացրէն	ton-coiglute
րո-բացրէն	ro-coiglute
ոօ-բացրէն	oo-coiglute

## 313. Verbal Nouns.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
NOM. } բացրա(ն) (բացարտ)	բացրա(ն)	
ACC. } բացրէն	բացրէն	
GEN. բացրէն	բացրա(ն) (բացրէն)	
DAT. բացրա(ն) (բացարտ)	բացրէնան	
NOM. } կոյլէն		—
ACC. } կոյլէն		—
GEN. կոյլէն		—
DAT. կոյլէն		—

314. In stems of Type (2) ending in ր, the Participle is usually in the form բարէն, not բարէ, as տիբր, banish: տիբարէն, banished; տմիր, play; տմարէն, played.

The endings formed on the participle [see par. 258 c.] follow this change, e.g., Imperfect 2nd singular, տիբարէն; Present Auton., տիբարէն, &c.

**315. General Rules for the formation of Verbal Noun.**

(a) As a general rule verbs of the first conjugation form their verbal noun in *əð*, if the final consonant of the stem be broad; in *eəð*, if it be slender, as—

vún, shut	vúnəð
mitt, destroy	mittəð
mot, praise	motəð
téig, read	téigəð.

(b) When the last vowel of the stem is preceded by a broad vowel, the *i* is usually dropped in the formation of the verbal noun, as—

buail, strike	bualəð
tóig, burn	tóigəð
goin, wound	goið
tbrúig, bruise	tbrúigəð

The *i* is not dropped in—

caoin, lament	caoinəð
rgaor, loose	rgaorəð
rmuid, reflect	rmuidəð

(c) Verbs of the second conjugation ending in *m*, *n* or *ŋ* generally form their verbal noun by adding *t*, as—

vibir, banish	vibirt
coram, defend	coraint (cornamt)
laðair, speak	laðairt
coisil, spare	coisilt

(d) Derived verbs ending in *uis* form their verbal noun by dropping the *i* and adding *as*; as, *áriouis*, *raise*, *áriouisas*.

(e) Derived verbs in *is* form their verbal noun by inserting *u* between the *i* and *s* and then adding *as*; as *minis*, *explain*, *miniusas*.

316. There are, however, many exceptions to the above rules. The following classification of the modes of forming the verbal noun will be useful.

(a) Some verbs have their verbal noun like the stem, *e.g.*, *fář*, grow; *óř*, drink; *rit*, run; *rnam*, swim, &c.

(b) Some verbs form their verbal noun by dropping *i* of the stem, *e.g.*, *cuiř*, put or send, *cuiř*; *cořis*, check, *cořis*; *ršuř*, cease, *ršuř*; *guř*, weep, *guř*, &c.

(c) Some verbs add *amain* or *eanamain* to the stem to form their verbal noun, *e.g.*, *caill*, lose, *cailleamain(t)*; *cpiero*, believe, *cpieroeamain(t)*; *fan*, stay, *fanamain(t)*, *tean*, follow, *teanamain(t)*; *ršap*, separate, *ršapamain(t)*, &c.

In the spoken language *t* is usually added to the classical termination *-amain*.

(d) A few add *an* or *ean* for the verbal noun, *e.g.*, *teag*, knock down, *teagán*; *téis*, let or permit, *téigean*; *cpéis*, abandon, *cpéigean*; *teis*, throw or cast, *teigean*.

(e) A few add *am* or *eam*, e.g., *reaf*, stand, *reafam*; *cait*, spend, consume, *caiteam*; *veun*, do or make, *veunam* (or *veunao*); *feit*, wait, *feiteam*.

(f) A small number end in *an* or *gan*, as *gaib*, take, *gaibain*; *fas*, find, *fasain*; *fas*, leave, *fasain*; *feao*, whistle, *feaoغان*.

A fairly full list of irregular verbal nouns is given in Appendix V.

## IRREGULAR VERBS.

317. In Old and Middle Irish the conjugation of verbs was very complex, but by degrees the varieties of conjugations became fewer, and nearly all verbs came to be conjugated in the same way. At the commencement of the modern period (*i.e.*, about the end of the sixteenth century) about fifteen verbs in common use retained their old forms. These are now classed as irregular. Excepting occasional survivals of older forms, all the other verbs had by this time become regular; so that from the stem of the verb it was possible in nearly every instance to tell all its forms except the *verbal noun*.

During the modern period even the irregular verbs have, through the operation of analogy, shown a tendency to adopt the forms of the modern regular conjugations.

### TÁIM, I AM.

318. The correct spelling of this verb is undoubtedly *atáim*, but long since it has lost its initial *a*, except when it occurs in the middle of a sentence, where it usually has a relative force. Some persons, by confounding this initial *a*, which really belongs to the verb, with the *modern* relative particle *a*, write the *a* separated from the *tá*: as *a tá* instead of *atá*.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

319. —	bimír, let us be
bí, be thou	bíðið, let you be
bíði ðé, let him be	bíðið. let them be

Autonomous, bítseap.

The negative particle is ná.

All the persons, except the 2nd sing., are often written as if formed from the spurious stem bíð: e.g., bíðeðað ré.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## 320. Present Tense—Absolute.

## SYNTHETIC FORM.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
táim, I am	táimíð, we are
táip, * thou art	tá ríb, táðað, you are
tá ðé, he is	táð, they are

Autonomous, táðap

## Present Tense (Analytic Form).

tá mé, I am	tá rínn, we are
tá tú, thou art	tá ríb, you are
tá ðé, he is	tá ríð, they are

## 321. Present Tense—Dependent.

fuilim	fuilmíð
fuilip	fuil ríb
fuil ðé	fuil ríð

Autonomous, fuilteap.

\* The early modern form, viz., táð, is still used in Munster, e.g., Cionnúp táð? (or Cionnúp táði'n tú?) How are you?

Negatively.	Interrogatively.	Neg. Interrog
I am not, &c.	Am I, &c.	Am I not, &c.
ní ȝuilm	an ȝuilm	nac ȝuilm
ní ȝuilm̄	an ȝuilm̄	nac ȝuilm̄
ní ȝuilm̄ ré	an ȝuilm̄ ré	nac ȝuilm̄ ré
ní ȝuilm̄io	ar. ȝuilm̄io	nac ȝuilm̄io
ní ȝuilm̄ið	an ȝuilm̄ið	nac ȝuilm̄ið
ní ȝuilm̄io	an ȝuilm̄io	nac ȝuilm̄io

The analytic forms are like those given above; as,  
ní ȝuilm̄ið, nac ȝuilm̄ið, &c.

### 322. Habitual Present.

#### SINGULAR.

bim (bíðim)

bír (bíðír)

bionn ré (bíð ré, bíðeann ré)

bíð (bíðio)

#### PLURAL.

bímid (bíðimo)

bíonn rið, bíti

Negatively, ní bim, &c. Interrogatively, an mbim, &c.

Neg. Interrog., nac mbim, &c.

Relative form ȝior (bíðear).

Autonomous, bítear

### 323. Imperfect Tense (*I used to be*).

#### SINGULAR.

do ȝinn (do bíðinn)

do ȝimír (bíðimír)

„ ȝíteá ( „ bíðteá)

„ ȝioð ré ( „ bíðealð ré)

„ ȝioðír (bíðtír)

Autonomous,

bíti

Negatively,

ní ȝinn

Interrogatively,

an mbinn?

Neg. interrog.

nac mbinn?

324.

## Past Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

το θιορ (θιθεαρ)	το θιομαρ (θιθεαμαρ)
„ θιρ (θιθιρ)	„ θιοθαρ (θιθεαθαρ)
„ θι ρέ	„ θιοθαρ, θιθεαθαρ

## Autonomous, θιθεαρ

325.

## DEPENDENT.

ηθαρ	ηθαμαρ
ηθαιρ	ηθαθαρ
ηαιθ ρέ	ηθαθαρ

## Autonomous, ηθεαρ

Negative, οὐ ηθαρ, οὐ ηθαιρ, οὐ ηαιθ ρέ, &amp;c.

Interrogatively (*Was I?* &c.).

αν ηθαρ αν ηθαιρ αν ηαιθ ρέ αν ηθαμαρ, &amp;c.

Neg. interrog. (*Was I not?* &c.).

ναό ηθαρ ναό ηθαιρ ναό ηαιθ ρέ, &amp;c.

326.

## Future Tense.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

θέατο, θεατο (θέιθεατο)	θέιμιτο, θειμιτο (θέιθομιτο)
θέιρ, θειρ (θέιθιρ)	θέιρ ηιθ, θειτι
θέιρ, θειρ ρέ	θέιρ, θειρ (θέιθοιρ)

## Relative Form,

θεαρ, θέαρ (θέιθεαρ)

## Autonomous,

θέιθεαρ, θειθεαρ

## Negatively,

οὐ θέατο

## Interrog.,

αν θέατο?

## Neg. Interrog..

ναό θέατο?

## 327. Secondary Future or Conditional.

so ȝéinn (ȝéirðinn)	ȝéimír (ȝéirðmír)
,, ȝéiteað (ȝéirðteáð)	ȝéað, ȝeað (ȝéirðeað) ríð
,, ȝeað, ȝeað (ȝéirðeað) ré ȝéirðír (ȝéirðvír)	

Autonomous,	ȝerði, ȝéití
Negative,	ní ȝéinn
Interrog.,	an mbéinn
Neg. interrog.,	nac mbéinn

## 328. THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

## Present Tense.

so ȝaðað	so ȝaðmuð
so ȝaðaip	so ȝaið ríð (ȝaðtæði)
so ȝaið ré	so ȝaðaio

The negative particle for this tense is ná: as, ná ȝaið maðt aðat. No thanks to you.

## 329.

## Past Tense.

so mbínn	so mbímir
so mbiteað	so mbioð ríð
so mbioð ré	so mbíðír

The negative particle is náp.

## Autonomous Form.

so ȝaðtær! may (they) be! (for once).

so mbiteað! „ „ „ (generally).

## Verbal Noun.

beit, to be.

## 330. Phrases containing the Verb Noun.

ír féidir liom (a)*	beit	I can be, &c.
ní féidir liom (a)	beit	I cannot be, &c.
tig leat (a)	beit	You can be, &c.
ní tig leat (a)	beit	You cannot be, &c
caitíodh ré	beit	He must b., &c.
caitíodh mé	beit	I must be, &c.
ní fuilair go raibh tú		You must have been, &c.
ír cormaill go raibh tú		
níor ó féidir ní b' tū		
ní cormaill go raibh mé		I must not have been, &c.
ní fuilair nácl raibh mé		
ír cónair túom (a)	beit	I ought to be.
ní cónair túuit (a)	beit	You ought not to be.
buadh cónair túo	beit	He ought to have been.
níor cónair túom (a)	beit	I ought not to have been.
buadh maití liom (a) ann	beit ann	I wish I were there.
ba maití liom go raibh mé		I wish I had been there.
ann		
cá ré le	beit ann	He is to be there.

## 331. The forms fuilim and raibar are used—

(1) After the particles ní, not; cá, where? an (or a), whether? go, that; and nácl or ná, that (conj.)...not.

\* This a is usually heard in the spoken language

(2) After the relative particle *Δ*, when it is preceded by a preposition, after the relative *Δ* when it means "what," "all that," "all which," and after the negative relative *nac*, who...not, which...not. *Cá* *θ-puīl* *ré?* Where is it? *Ni* *puīl* *Δ* *θiōr* *agam*. I don't know. *Tá* *θiōr* *agam* *ná* *puīl* *ré ann*. I know it is not there. *Θeip* *ré* *go* *θpuīl* *ré* *rlán*. He says that he is well. *Sin* *é* *an* *θeap* *nac* *θ-puīl* *ag* *obair*. That is the man who is not working. *Θuθairt* *ré* *liom* *nac* *rláib* *ré ann*. He told me he was not there.

332. We sometimes find the verb *puīl* eclipsed after the negative *ni*, not; as, *ni* *θpuīl* *ré* he is not

For the use of the Relative Form refer to pars.  
554-560.

### THE ASSERTIVE VERB 1S.

333. The position of a verb in an Irish sentence is at the very beginning; hence, when a word other than the verb is to be brought into prominence, the important word is to be placed in the most prominent position—viz., at the beginning of the sentence, under cover of an *unemphatic impersonal verb*. There is no stress on the verb so used; it merely denotes that prominence is given to some idea in the sentence other than that contained in the verb. There is a similar expedient adopted in English: thus, "He was speaking of you," and, "It

is of you he was speaking." In Irish there is a special verb for this purpose, and of this verb there are forms to be used in principal clauses and forms to be used in dependent clauses—*e.g.*:

Is mise an peap. I am the man.

Seirfim gur ab é Seán an peap. I say John is the man.

### 334. Forms of the Assertive Verb.

#### (a) In Principal Sentences.

Present Tense, *is*. Relative, *is* or *is*.

Past Tense, *ba*.

[Future Simple, *bu*. Relative, *bu*].

Secondary Future or Conditional, *ba*.

Subjunctive, *ab*; sometimes *ba*.

Subjunc. Pres. (with *so*) *so* *mba*, *gurab*; (with *ná*) *nálab*, *nála*.

Subjunc. Past. *ba* *mbat*, "if it were."

### 335. Present Tense.

<i>is mé</i> , I am ; or, it is I.	<i>is riún</i> , we are, it is we.
<i>is tú</i> , thou art, it is you.	<i>is rib</i> , you are, it is you.
<i>is é</i> , he is, it is he.	<i>is iad</i> , they are, it is they.
<i>is í</i> , she is, it is she.	

### 336. Past Tense.

<i>ba mé</i> ,	I was, it was I.
<i>ba tú</i> ,	thou wast, &c.
<i>tab' é</i> , <i>tab' é</i> , <i>ba n-é</i> ,	he was, &c.
<i>tab' í</i> , <i>tab' í</i> , <i>ba n-í</i>	she was, &c.
<i>ba riún</i> ,	we were, &c.
<i>ba rib</i> ,	you were, &c.
<i>tab' iad</i> , <i>tab' iad</i> , <i>ba n-iad</i>	they were, &c.

Þurð or þur is never used in the spoken language, and scarcely ever in writing, except when a superlative adjective or adverb occurs in a sentence, the verbs of which are in the Future Tense.

337. In the Present Tense the verb IS is omitted after all particles except MĀ, if: as, 1r mé an fear. I am the man; Ni mé an fear. I am not the man.

338. In the Past Tense BA is usually omitted after particles when the word following BA begins with a consonant: as, Ær mait teat an ait? Did you like the place? Náir þeag an luac é? Was it not a small price? BA is not usually omitted when the following word begins with a vowel or f, but the a is elided: as, Niðr b' e ðin an rafapt. That was not the priest. Notice that the word immediately after BA or BAð, even when BA or BAð is understood, is usually aspirated when possible.

(b) *In Dependent Sentences.*

339. **Present Tense.**—AB is used instead of ip after SUp, meaning "that"; as, mearfaim SUpab é ðin an fear. I think that is the man. Before a consonant AB is usually omitted; as, veipr é SUp mire an fear. He says that I am the man. AB is always omitted after nað, that...not. Saoiðim nað é ðin an pi. I think that is not the king.

340. **Past Tense.**—The word BA or BAð becomes b' in dependent sentences and is usually joined to the

particle which precedes it. When the following word begins with a consonant the 'v' is usually omitted. *Meárlaim gúrb é reo an teac.* I think that this was the house; *meárlann ré nár mait te Niall Úeit annro.* He thinks that Niall did not like to be here. *An meárlann tú gúr mait an rgeul e?* Do you think that it was a good story?

**341. Conditional.**—In dependent sentences *ba* or *bað* becomes *m̄ba*. *Saoilim go m̄ba mait leir* ou leat. I think he would like to go with you. *Deir ré nac m̄ba mait leir.* He says that he would not like. In the spoken language the tendency is to use the past tense forms in dependent sentences; hence Irish speakers would say *gúr mait* in the above sentence instead of *go m̄ba mait*, and *nár mait* instead of *nac m̄ba mait*.

The *Future* is never used in dependent sentences in the spoken language.

### beir, BEAR or CARRY.

#### 342.

#### Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
beir	beuirfao	beirte	beireis

This verb is conjugated like *buail*, except in the Past, Future and Conditional.

#### 343.

#### Past Tense.

*muðar, muðair, &c., like motar* (par. 264).

The prefixes *vo* and *vo* were not used before this Past Tense in early usage and not generally in present-day usage.

## 344.

## Future.

τευρφασ, τευρφαιρ, &c., like μοιρασ (par. 265).

In early modern usage there was no *f* in this Tense, or in the Conditional. The rule was that when a short vowel in the Present became long in the Future stem no *f* was added. This rule is still observed in the Futures ending in -όσασ or -εοσασ.

## Conditional.

τευρφαιν, &c., like μοιραιν (par. 266).

Verbal Noun τρειτ, gen. τρειτε or τειτε.

345. This verb is of very frequent use in the idiom “τειτ *αι*”; *lay hold on, catch, overtake*; e.g., τυσασ ομ, I was caught. Ήι φιτ τρειτ *αι*. There is no laying hold on him (or it).

## ΤΑΘΑΙΡ, GIVE or BRING.

## Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
ταθαιρ	τευρφασ τιυθρασ ταθαρφασ	ταθαρτα τυστα	ταθαιρτ

## 346. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

1. —	ταθραιμιρ, (ταθραμ)	τυσαιμιρ
2. ταθαιρ	ταθραιρ	
3. ταθρασ or τυσασ τε	ταθραιριρ, -ασαιριρ	(or τυσαιριρ)

Autonomous, ταθαρταρ, τυσταρ.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

347.

## Present Tense.

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
SING.	1. (οο-) θειριμ 2. (οο-) θειριρ 3. (οο-) θειρ(-εανν) ρέ	ταθραιμ ταθραιρ, ταθρανν ρέ
PLUR.	1. (οο-) θειριμίο 2. (οο-) θειρεανν ριθ 3. (οο-) θειριο	ταθραιμίο ταθρανν ριθ ταθραιο

ταγδαίμ, &c. (like μολαίμ), may be used in both constructions.

Autonomous, (οο-)θειρτεαρ, ταθρεταρ or ταγταρ.

348. By the "Dependent Form" of the Verb we mean that form which is used after the following Particles, viz., *νί*, not; *αν*, whether; *ναč*, whether... not; or who, which or that...not; *γο*, that; *κά*, where; *μυνα*, unless; *τά*, if; and the relative when governed by a preposition.

349.

## Imperfect Tense.

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
	(οο-)θειρινν	ταθραινν
	(οο-)θειρτεά	&c., like ο'γιασγραινν
	&c., like θυατινν (262)	(305)

Or, ταγδαίν, ταγτά, &c., for both *absolute* and *dependent* constructions.

Autonomous, θειρτί, ταθρεταοι, ταγταοι.

## Past Tense.

350. The Past Tense has only one form: *ταγάρ*, *ταγαίρ*, &c., like *μολάρ* (264). *Αὐτον* *ταγάρ*.

In early usage this Past Tense did not take *το* or *το*, as *το ταγάρ*, “that I gave.” In present-day usage this peculiarity is sometimes adhered to and sometimes not.

351.

## Future Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

(το-)θευρράτ

&amp;c.,

like *μολράτ* (265)*ταθαρράτ*, &c., may be used in both constructions.Autonomous, *θευρράτ*      *ταθαρράτ*

352.

## Conditional.

## (το-)θευρράτην

&amp;c.,

like *μολράτην* (266)*τιυθράτην*, *τιοθράτην**τιυθαρράτα*, *τιοθαρράτα*

&amp;c.

*ταθαρράτην*, &c., may be used in both constructions.Autonomous, *θέατραί*, *ταθαρράτι*.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

This Mood occurs only in dependent construction.

353. Present—*ταγάρ*, *ταγαίρ*, *ταγαίρο* *τέ*, &c., or  
*ταθράτ*, *ταθράτη*, &c.

354. Past—*ταγαίνη*, &c., like *μολαίνη* (268).

## Verbal Noun.

*ταθαίρτη*, gen. *ταθαρράτα*.

355.

Αθαίρ, SAY.

## Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
Αθαίρ	{ θευρράσ Αθρόσαν	πάτοτε	πάσ

356.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1. —	Αθηταίμιρ (Αθηταμ)
2. Αθαίρ	Αθραίσ
3. Αθρασθ ρέ	Αθραιστήρ, Αθρασαοιρ

357.

Present Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

1. (Α) θειριμ	Αθραίμ
2. (Α) θειριηρ	Αθραίρι
3. (Α) θειρ or θειρεανη ρέ	Αθρανη ρέ (Αθαιρ)
1. (Α) θειριμιο	Αθραιμιο
2. (Α) θειριτι	Αθρανη ριο
3. (Α) θειριτο	Αθραιτο

Autonomous, (Α) θειρτεαρ Αθαρταρ

The initial *α* of θειριμ, &c., is now usually dropped. The same remark holds for the other tenses. The *ο* of θειριμ, &c., is not usually aspirated by a foregoing particle. The absolute and dependent constructions are sometimes confused in spoken usage.

358.

Imperfect Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

1. Αθειρινη
2. Αθειρτεαλ
3. Αθειρεασθ ρέ

&amp;c.

## DEPENDENT.

Αθραινη
Αθαρτα
Αθρασθ ρέ

&amp;c.

Autonomous, Αθειριτι

Αθαρταοι

359.

## Past Tense.

αὐτοῦμαρ,	αὐτοῦμαրτ	τοῦμαρ,	τοῦμαρτ
αὐτοῦμαրι		τοῦμαρι	
αὐτοῦμαριτ ῥέ		τοῦμαριτ ῥέ	
αὐτοῦματαρ		τοῦματαρ	
αὐτοῦματαρ		τοῦματαρ	
αὐτοῦματαρ		τοῦματαρ	

Autonomous, (α)τοῦμαρ or (α)τοῦμαρταρ

360.

## Future Tense.

τευρβαν	αθρόσαν
τευρβαιν	αθρόσαιν
τευρβαιντ ῥέ	αθρόσαιντ ῥέ
Autonomous, τεαρβαν	αθρόσταν

In the spoken language the absolute and dependent forms are often confused.

361.

## Conditional.

τευρβανην	αθρόσανην
τευρβά	αθρόστά
τευρβαντ ῥέ	αθρόσαντ ῥέ
Autonomous, τεαρβαν	αθρόσταν

In spoken language the two constructions are often confused.

362.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, αθριαν,	αθριαιν,	αθριαιτ ῥέ, &c.
Past, αθριανην,	αθριαιντά,	αθριαιτ ῥέ, &c.

363.

## Participles.

τάιότε, ιον-τάιότε, το-τάιότε, το-τάιότε.

## Verbal Noun.

τάν or τάντα, gen. sing. and nom. plur. τάιότε

## SAB, TAKE.

364.

## Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
SAB	{ SEABAO SEOBAO	SABCA	SABAIL

This verb is regular except in the Future and Conditional.

365.

## Future.

SEOBAO, SEOBAIL, SEOBAD RE, &amp;c.

366.

## Conditional.

SEOBAINN, SEOBCA, SEOBAD RE, &amp;c.

367. In the spoken language the Future is often made SABAO, &c., and the Conditional, SABAINN, as in regular verbs.

## Verbal Noun.

SABAIL or SABAL, gen. sing. and nom. plural SABALA.

## FAS, GET, FIND.

368.

## Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
FAS	{ SEOBAO SEABAO	FASCA	FASAIL

369.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1. — FASAIMIR
2. FAS FASAO
3. FASAO RE FASAOIR

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

370

## Present Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(oo-) <i>Seiðim</i>	<i>þaðaím</i>
„ <i>Seiðir</i>	<i>þaðaír</i>
„ <i>Seiðeann ré, Seið ré</i>	<i>þaðaann ré</i>
„ <i>Seiðmíð</i>	<i>þaðaímíð</i>
„ <i>Seiðeann ríð</i>	<i>þaðaann ríð</i>
„ <i>Seiðríð</i>	<i>þaðaíð</i>

**Autonomous, (oo-) *Seiðeap* *þaðtaap***

In spoken usage *þaðaím*, &c., is used in both dependent and absolute constructions.

In the Auton. *þaðtaap*, *þaðteap* and *þaðtaap* are used.

371.

## Imperfect Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(oo-) <i>Seiðinn</i>	<i>þaðaínn</i>
„ <i>Seiðtead</i>	<i>þaðtað</i>
&c.	&c.

**Autonomous, *Seiðti*, *þaðtaoi*, *þaðti*.**

Spoken usage, Absolute, *Seiðinn* or *þaðaínn*, &c.

372.

## Past Tense.

This Tense has only one form for both absolute and dependent constructions. The prefixes *oo* and *ri* are not used with it.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. <i>þuðarap</i>	<i>þuðaramað</i>
2. <i>þuðaraið</i>	<i>þuðaraðað</i>
3. <i>þuðaír ré</i>	<i>þuðaraðað</i>

**Autonomous, *þuð*, *þuðaðap* or *þuðarað*.**

In spoken usage *þuð* often becomes *þuðeap*.

373.

## Future Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

1. ȝeoðað, ȝeaðað
2. ȝeoðaip, &c.
3. ȝeoðaip ðré
1. ȝeoðaipmíð
2. ȝeoðaip ðið
3. ȝeoðaip

## DEPENDENT.

þfuigðeað or þfaigðeað  
þfuigðip &c.  
þfuigðip ðré  
þfuigðimíð  
þfuigðip ðið  
þfuigðip

Autonomous, { ȝeoðcær  
                  { ȝeaðcær      { fuigðcær  
                  { faigðcær

374.

## Conditional.

## ABSOLUTE.

ȝeoðaipn or ȝeaðaipn  
ȝeoðcá, &c.  
ȝeoðað ðré  
ȝeoðaipmíp  
ȝeoðað ðið  
ȝeoðaipmíp

## DEPENDENT.

þfuigðipn or þfaigðipn  
þfuigðcá, &c.  
þfuigðeað ðré  
þfuigðimíp  
þfuigðeað ðið  
þfuigðipmíp

Autonomous, { ȝeoðcái  
                  { ȝeaðcái      { fuigðcái  
                  { faigðcái

375.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present, ȝaðað, ȝaðaip, ȝaðaip ðré. &c.

Past, ȝaðaipn, ȝaðcá, ȝaðað ðré, &c.

376.

## Participle.

ȝaðcá, ȝaðte or ȝaða.

The derivative participles of this verb are usually formed from the genitive of the verbal noun.

ion-ȝaðala, ro-ȝaðala, do-ȝaðala.

377. **œun, DO, MAKE.****Principal Parts.**

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
œun	œunþað	œunta	œunðam

378. **IMPERATIVE MOOD.**

1. —	œunðaimiſ
2. œun	œunðaið
3. œunðað ſé	œunðaiðiſ

**Autonomous, œuntað.****INDICATIVE MOOD.**379. **Present Tense.****ABSOLUTE.**

1. (vo-) ɔním (ɔníðim)	
2. " ɔnír &c.	
3. " ɔní ſé or ɔníðan ſé	
1. " ɔníðim	
2. " ɔníði	
3. " ɔníð	

**DEPENDENT.**

œunðaim
œunðaið
œunðann ſé
œunðaimið
œunðann ſið
œunðaið

**Relative, ɔníðor, ɔníðear****Autonomous, ɔníðear**

In present-day usage œunðaim, &c., are very frequently used in the absolute construction.

380.

## Imperfect Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

το-ξνίνη, ξνιόνη  
„ ξνίτελ, &c.  
„ ξνίοθ ρέ  
„ ξνίμιρ  
„ ξνίοθ ριθ  
„ ξνίοιρ

Autonomous, το-ξνίτι

## DEPENDENT.

τευνάνη  
τευντά  
τευναθ ρέ  
τευνατιρ  
τευναθ ριθ  
τευνατιρ

τευνταοι

381.

## Past Tense.

το-ριννεαρ  
„ ριννιρ  
„ ριννε ρέ  
„ ριννεαμαρ  
„ ριννεαθαρ  
„ ριννεαταρ

Autonomous, το-ριννεαθ

τελρηαρ  
τελρηατ  
τελρηα ρέ  
τελρηαμαρ  
τελρηαθαρ  
τελρηαταρ

τελρηαθ

In Munster dialect τεινεαρ, τεινιρ, τειν ρέ, τεινεαμαρ, τεινεαθαρ, and τεινεαταρ are used as the Past Tense in both absolute and dependent constructions.

382.

## Future Tense.

## ABSOLUTE AND DEPENDENT.

τευνραο  
τευνραιρ  
τευνραιθ ρέ

Autonomous, τευνραρ

τευνραιμιρ  
τευνραιθ ριθ  
τευνραιο

383.

## Conditional.

τευνραιη  
τευνρά  
τευνραθ ρέ

τευνραιμιρ  
τευνραθ ριθ  
τευνραιοιρ

Autonomous, τευνραι

## 384. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## Present.

deunatō deunatīr deunatō rē deunatōrō, &amp;c.

## Past.

deunatīn deunatā deunatō rē deunatōrī, &amp;c.

## Participles.

deunta ion-deunta ro-deunta vo-deunta

## Verbal Noun.

deunam (deunatō) gen. deunta

## 385. feic, SEE.

## Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
feic	cífeatō	feicte	feicrinc
	feicfeatō		

## 386. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- feicimīr (feiceam)
- feic feictrō
- feiceatō rē feictrōrī

387. The imperative 2nd sing. and 2nd plural are hardly ever found; for we rarely command or ask a person to "see" anything, except in the sense of "look at" it. In Irish a distinct verb is always used in the sense of "look at," such as feuc, dearc, bhealbhuis, &c. The verb feuc must not be confounded with feic; it is a distinct verb, and has a complete and regular conjugation.

388. In early modern Irish feic was the stem used in the imperative and in the dependent construction throughout the entire verb.

389.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1. <i>oo-čim</i> (čiōim)	peicim
2. <i>oo-čip</i> , &c.	peicip
3. <i>oo-či ré</i> , čionn <i>re</i>	peiceann ré
1. <i>oo-čimis</i>	peicimis
2. <i>oo-čiti</i>	peiceann rið
3. <i>oo-čio</i>	peiciro
Autonomous, {	
<i>oo-čitear</i>	peictear
<i>oo-čiteap</i>	peicteap

390. The prefix *oo-*, now usually dropped, is an altered form of the old prefix *at*—e.g., *atčim*. This form survives in the spoken language only in the Ulster form, 'čim or čiōim, &c.

391.

## Imperfect Tense.

<i>oo-činn</i> , čiōinn	peicinn
<i>oo-čiteá</i> , &c.	peicteá
<i>oo-čioú ré</i>	peiceaú ré
<i>oo-čimis</i>	peicimis
<i>oo-čioú rið</i>	peiceaú rið
<i>oo-čioír</i>	peiciroír

In spoken language *peicinn*, &c., is used in both Absolute and Dependent constructions.

Ulster usage, čiōeann, čiōteá, &c.

## 392.

## Past Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

1. <i>connac</i>	<i>(connacar)</i>	<i>facar</i>	<i>{ feacar</i>
<i>(connacar)</i>		<i>facar</i>	<i>feaca</i>
2. <i>connacair</i>	<i>(connacair)</i>	<i>facair</i>	<i>feacair</i>
3. <i>connaic ré</i>	<i>(connairc ré)</i>	<i>facair ré</i>	<i>feaca ré</i>
1. <i>conncamair</i> [ <i>connaircamair</i> ]		<i>facamair</i>	<i>feacamair</i>
2. <i>conncaðair</i> [ <i>connaircaðair</i> ]		<i>facadair</i>	<i>feacadair</i>
3. <i>conncaðar</i> [ <i>connaircaðar</i> ]		<i>facadair</i>	<i>feacadair</i>

**Autonomous,** *conncar*      *facar* or *factar*

The older spelling was *atconnac* and *atconnairc*, &c. The *t* is still preserved in the Ulster dialect: *tanaic me*, &c., I saw.

## 393.

## Future Tense.

<i>(oo-)cífead</i> , <i>cíðfead</i> ,	<i>feicfead</i> ,
<i>(oo-)cífríp</i> , <i>cíðfríp</i> ,	<i>feicfríp</i> ,
&c.	&c.

**Autonomous,** *cífead*      *feicfead*

## 394.

## Conditional.

<i>(oo-)cífrínn</i> , <i>cíðfrínn</i> ,	<i>feicfrínn</i> ,
&c.	&c.

In the Future and Conditional *feicfead*, &c., and *feicfrínn*, &c., can be used in both constructions.

## 395.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, *feicead*, *feicfríp*, *feicfríð ré*, &c.

Past,      *feicfrínn*, *feicfead*, *feicead ré*, &c.

Participle, *feicte*.

396.

## Verbal Noun.

feicrint, feircint, gen. feicreana.

From the genitive of the verbal noun the compound **participles** are formed: viz., in-feicreana, to-feicreana, vo-feicreana.

397.

## CLOIS or CLUIN, HEAR.

These two verbs are quite regular except in the Past Tense.

In old writings the particle **at** or **vo-** is found prefixed to all the tenses in the absolute construction, but this particle is now dropped.

398.

## Past Tense.

cuataf, cuata

cuatalamaf

cuatalaf

cuatalabaf

cuataf ré

cuatalataf

Autonomous, cuatalataf

## Verbal Nouns.

ctor or cloifint (or more modern cluinfint or cloiftin).

## TAR, COME.

399.

## IMPERATIVE.

SING. 1. —

PLUR. tigimif (tigeam)

2. tar

tigio

3. tigearó (tagaró) ré

tigirif

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

400.

## Present Tense.

1. tigim	tigimis
2. tigir	tigiri
3. tig re	tigiro

Relative (wanting).

Autonomous, tigcear.

The Present Tense has also the forms tagaim or teagaim inflected regularly.

401.

## Imperfect Tense.

tiginn, tagainn, or teagainn, regularly.

402.

## Past Tense.

tángar, tágas	tángaman
tángair	tángabair
táning re	tángadair

403.

Autonomous, tángar.

The *ng* in this Tense is not sounded like *ng* in *long*, *a ship*, but with a helping vowel between them—*e.g.*, 2nd pers. sing.—is pronounced as if written *tánagair*; but in Munster the *g* is silent except in the 3rd pers. sing.—*e.g.*, *tángar* is pronounced *haw-nuss*.

404. Future Tense, tiocfaid, &c., inflected regularly; also spelled tiucfaid, &c.

Relative, tiocfaid

Conditional, tiocfaidh, &amp;c., inflected regularly.

## 405. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, *tigead*, *tágad*, or *teágad*, inflected regularly.

Past, *tiginn*, *tágann*, or *teágann*, inflected regularly.

406. Verbal Noun, *teáct* (or *tioðaáct*, *tíðeaáct*)

Participle, *teágta* or *tágta*.

## 407. TÉÍG, GO.

N.B.—The present stem is also spelled *téið*, but *téíg* is preferable, as it better represents the older form, *tág* or *téíg*.

## 408. IMPERATIVE.

1. —	téígimír (téígeam)
2. téíg	téígið
3. téígead ré	téígiðir

409. In the Imperative 2nd sing. and 2nd plur. other verbs are now usually substituted, such as *gáð*, *imtíð*, *téígið*. The use of *téígið*, plur. *téígiðið*, seems to be confined to these two forms; *imtíð* has a full, regular conjugation.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## 410. Present.

1. téígim (téíðim)	1. téígimíð
2. téígír &c.	2. téígsti
3. téíg ré, téígeann ré	3. téígið

Autonomous, *téígtear*

## Imperfect Tense.

céiginn (or céidinn), &c., regularly.

411.

## Past Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

1. cuaðar
2. cuaðair
3. cuaðr̥ ré
1. cuaðamari
2. cuaðaðar
3. cuaðaðari

## DEPENDENT.

- deacar
- deacair
- deacair r̥é
- deacamari
- deacáðar
- deacáðari

Autonomous, cuaðtar

deacar

In Munster cuaðar, &c., is used in the dependent construction, as níor cuaðr̥ ré, he did not go. Deacar, &c., is also used in Munster.

412.

## Future.

## SINGULAR.

1. naðar, naðar
2. naðair, naðair
3. naðar r̥é, naðair r̥é

## PLURAL.

- naðamaið, naðamaið
- naðair r̥ið, naðair r̥ið
- naðar, naðair

Relative, naðar, naðar.

Autonomous, naðtar, naðtar.

413.

## Conditional.

naðainn or naðainn, &c., regularly.

The Future and Conditional are sometimes spelled naðrau, &c., and naðrainn, &c.

## 414. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, *téigead*, *téigír*, *téigíð ré*, &c.

Past, *téiginn*, *téigtead*, *téigead ré*, &c.

## 415. Verbal Noun.

*vul*, gen. *vola* (sometimes *vulta*).

Participle of Necessity.

*vulta* (as, *ní vulta ód*, *he ought not to go*).

Derivative Participles.

*ion-vola*, *ro-vola*, *vo-vola*.

## 416. īt, EAT.

This verb is regular except in the Future and Conditional.

## Principal Parts.

Imper.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
īt	īorða	ītte	īte

## 417. Future Tense.

## SINGULAR.

1. *īorða* (*īorða*)

2. *īorðír*, &c.

3. *īorðið ré*

## PLURAL.

*īorðamðoið*

*īorðið ríð*

*īorðið*

Relative, *īorðarf* (*īorðarf*).

Autonomous, *īorðar*.

## 418. Conditional.

## SINGULAR.

1. *īorða* (*īorða*)

2. *īorðá*, &c.

3. *īorða* *ré*

## PLURAL.

*īorðamðoið*

*īorðið ríð*

*īorðið*

419. As well as the regular Past Tense, τύτεαρ, &c., there is another Past Tense, viz., τυαθαρ, in use.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. τυαθαρ	τυαθαταρ
2. τυαθαιρ	τυαθαθαρ
3. τυατό ρέ	τυαθαταρ

### RIGIM, I REACH.

420. This verb is nearly obsolete, its place being taken by the regular verbs τροιτιμ and τροιτιμ.

Its Past Tense is inflected like τλασ.

1. τάνσαρ, τάνας	τάνσαταρ
2. τάνσαιρ	τάνσαθαρ
3. τάνιτ ρέ	τάνσαναρ

### 421. Verbal Noun.

ποσταιν or πασταιν.

Rigim has a special usage in the phrase πιγιμ ατεαρ, "I need," (whence, πασταναρ, need, necessity: παστανας, necessary: from the verbal noun.)

### MARVATIM or MARVUIGIM, I KILL.

422. This verb is quite regular except in Future and Conditional.

Future, ταρθατο, ταρθδεατο, ταιρεθδατο, ταιρθεδεατο or ταιρθρεατο (with usual terminations).

Conditional, ταρθαтин, ταρθδеаин, ταιрeθаин, ταιрθеdеаин or ταιрθреаин, &c., &c.

### Verbal Noun.

ταρθат or ταρθзат, to kill or killing.

## SOME DEFECTIVE VERBS.

**423. AÍR**, quoth, say or said. This verb is used only when the exact words of the speaker are given. (It corresponds exactly with the Latin "inquit.") It is frequently written *áirfa* or *áir*, as *áirfa mire*, said I. When the definite article immediately follows this latter form the *r* is often joined to the article, as, *áir an fear* or *áir rán fear*, says the man. "Cí a tú féin?" *áir reileann*. "Who are you?" said he.

When the exact words of the speaker are not given translate "says" by *teir*, and "said" by *taibhírt*. When the word "that" is understood after the English verb "say" go (or *nac* if "not" follows) must be expressed in Irish.

**424. TÁIR**, It seems or it seemed. This verb is always followed by the preposition *le*: as, *táir liom*, it seems to me, methinks; or, it seemed to me, methought. *Táir teat*. It seems to you. *Táir teir an bhean*. It seemed to the man.

**425. PEAOAIR**, I know, I knew. This verb is nearly always used negatively or interrogatively, and although really a past tense has a present meaning as well as a

past. *Ni fheadar.* I do, or did, not know. *Ni fheadairi ré.* He does not know, or he did not know.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. <i>fheadar</i>	1. <i>fheadraim</i>
2. <i>fheadrair (-ir)</i>	2. <i>fheadraibh</i>
3. <i>fheadairi ré</i>	3. <i>fheadraim</i>

N.B.—The forms just given are those used in the spoken language, the literary forms are: *fheadar*, *fheadairi tú*, *fheadairi ré*, *fheadraim*, *fheadraibh*, and *fheadraim*.

**426. TÁRLA,** There came to pass, it happened or happened to be. It is also used to express the meeting of one person with another.

**427. O'FÓBHAIR** or **BA ÓBBHAIR**, "It all but happened." *E.g.*, *o'fóbhair óam tuitim*, It all but happened to me to fall, I had like to fall, I had well nigh fallen. The same meaning is expressed by *o'fóbhair go* *ocuitfínn*.

**428. fEUDAIM,** I can, is regular in all its tenses, but it has no imperative mood.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

---

### The Adverb.

**429.** There are not many simple adverbs in Irish, the greater number of adverbs being made up of two or more words. Almost every Irish adjective may be-

come an adverb by having the particle "go" prefixed to it: as, *maič*, good; *go maič*, well; *umal*, humble; *go n-umal*, humbly.

430. This *go* is really the preposition *go*\* with its meaning of "with." (Do not confound this word with *go* meaning "to," they are two distinct prepositions). Of course this particle has now lost its original meaning in the case of most adverbs.

431. Adverbs may be compared; their comparative and superlative degrees are, however, those of the adjectives from which they are derived; the particle *go* is not used before the comparative or superlative.

432. It may be well to remark here that when an adjective begins with a vowel *go* prefixes *n*, as *go n-annam*, seldom.

433. The following list may now be regarded as simple adverbs although many of them are disguised compounds.

<i>amac</i>	out (used <i>only</i> after a verb of motion).
<i>amus</i> , <i>amuič</i>	outside, out; never used after a verb of motion. He is out, <i>ta ré amus</i> . He is standing outside the door, <i>ta ré 'na rəpəm taob amus</i> <i>te 'n doþar</i> .

\* This preposition is now used only in a few phrases; as *mile go leit*, a mile and (with) a half: *plat go leit*, a yard and a half: *bliaðain go leit ó foin*, a year and a half ago.

áṁ, amac,	however.	for, yet.
áṁtac,		1 muða, amá, astray (mistaken).
amáin, alone, only.		inré (ané), yesterday.
amait, as, like.		inrui (anrui), to-day.
amlaró, thus.		1 mbáraç (amáraç), to-morrow.
anoct, to-night.		irteac, in ( <i>motion only</i> ).
anoir, now.		irtis, inside ( <i>rest</i> ).
apéir, last night.		so h-anndam, seldom.
apir(t). again.		so fóir, yet, awhile.
cá? where?		ní (nior), not.
ceana, already, previously.		ca (cañ), ( <i>Ulster</i> ),
conur? cionnur? how?		nuair, when.
com, com, as ( <i>see par. 154</i> ).		catam? } when?
pearua, henceforth, at once.		caþoin? }
leir,	also.	mar, as, like.
þreirin,		mar riñ, thus.

Þiú, even; as, nior labair ré Þiú aon fócal amáin. *He did not speak even one word.* Þan Þiú na h-anndla do tærriains. *Without even taking breath.* Þiú is really a noun, and is followed by the genitive case, whenever the definite article comes between it and the noun; otherwise it is followed by a nominative case.

**434.** It may be useful to remark here that the words inrui, to-day; inré, yesterday; 1 mbáraç, to-morrow; apéir, last night; anoct, to-night; can be used only as adverbs. *He came to-day.* Táinig ré inrui. *He*

*went away yesterday.* **O' imcise** ré inoé. When the English words are **nouns**, we must use **an tā** (or **an oirde**) before **inoiu**, **inoé**, **aréir**, etc. *Yesterday was fine.* **Bi an tā inoé bheag.** *To-morrow will be wet.* **Beiró an tā i mbáraí fliuc.** *Last night was cold.* **Bi an oirde aréir fuaí.**

#### 435. Interrogative Words.

when? **cataim?** cé an uair? which (adj.)? cé an...? cé an t-am?

where? **cá?** cé an áit? what? **cád?** cneadh? **conad?** céard?

how? **conur** (cionnur)? cé whither? **cá?** an éaoi? go té mar?

why? **cád 'na taoibh?** **cád** whence? **cád ar?** **cád** cneise? **cád fáit?** cé ab ar? an fáit?

how far? } cé an fáid? how much? } cé meadh? } cé an fáid?

how long? } an fáid? how many? } an mó?

which (pron.)? **cioca?** cé? who? cé? **cia?** cé n-é (i, iad)?

#### Up and Down.

**436.** **Up.** { **ruaír**, upwards, motion upwards from the place where the speaker is.

{ **aníor**, upwards, motion up from below to the place where the speaker is.

{ **tuáir** (also spelled **ruaír**), up, rest above the place where the speaker is.

{ **aníor** (**ábúr**),\* up, rest where the speaker is.

\* This form is used in Ulster and North Connaught, but generally this word is used only for rest on this side of a room, river, &c., or here, where we are.

Down.	riɔr, downwards, motion down from where the speaker is.
	anuaṛ, downwards, motion down from above to where the speaker is.
	tior (riɔr), down, below, rest below the place where the speaker is.
	anuaṛ (aðuṛ),* down, rest where the speaker is.

437. The following examples will fully illustrate the use of the words for "up" and "down":—

A.

A says to B,	I'll throw it down,	Caitfirð mē riɔr ē.
	Is it down yet?	Ófuit ré tior fóṛ?
	Throw it up,	Cait anior ē.
	It is up now,	Tá ré anior anoir.
B says to A,	I'll throw it up,	Caitfirð mē ruar ē.
	Is it up yet?	Ófuit ré tuar fóṛ?
	Throw it down,	Cait anuaṛ ē.
	It is down now.	Tá ré anuaṛ anoir.

B.

N.B.—He is up (i.e., he is not in bed), Tá ré 'na ḥurðe.

We are up, Tá ḥinn 'na ḥurðe

\* See foot-note at end of page 160.

## 438.

Rest	Motion from the speaker	Motion towards the speaker	Prepositional use, this side of, etc.
‘ Ófuir, aður, this side	anonn	anall	Lærtður ve, taoð, ófuir ve
tall, the other side, yonder	tall	anall	Lærtall ve, taoð tall ve
amuis (amuis), outside	amac	amac	Lærmuis, taoð amuis ve
írtis, inside	írtseac	írtseac	Læirtis, taoð írtis ve

## Over.

439. The following sentences will exemplify the translation of the word “over”:—

A. \_\_\_\_\_ B. .

A says to B, I'll throw it over to Caisleán mé anonn  
you, cugat e.

„ Is it over yet? Ófuil ré tall for?  
 „ Throw it over to me, Caisleán anall cugam e.  
 „ It is over now, Tá ré aður anoir.

He went over the wall. Cuaid ré tár an mballa.

He went over to Scotland. Cuaid ré anonn go  
land. h-Albain.

He came over from Scotland. Táinig ré anall o  
Scotland. Albain.

## North, South, East, West.

The root οἱρ means *front*: ἵαρ means *back*.

440. The ancients faced the rising sun in naming the points of the compass; hence ἸΟΙΡ, east; ἸΑΙΡ, west; ἔΝΔΙΟ, north; ἔΝΔΑΣ, south.

441.

Rest	Motion from the speaker towards the	Motion towards the speaker from the	Prepositional use, <i>east of, west of, north of, south of,</i>
ἔνδι, east	ροἱρ	ἀνοἱρ	{ *λαρτοῖρ τε; ἀρ ἀν ταοῦ ἔνδι τε; διατ ἔνδι τε
ἔναι, west	ριαρ	ἀνιαιρ	{ *λαιρτιαιρ τε; ἀρ ἀν ταοῦ ἔναι τε; δια ἔναι τε
ἔνδιο, north	ό ἔνδιο	ἀντυαιο	{ *λαρτυαιο τε; ἀρ ἀν ταοῦ ἔνδιο τε; δια ἔνδιο τε
ἔναιρ, south	ό ἔναιρ	ἀνοεαιρ	{ *λαιρτεαιρ τε; ἀρ ἀν ταοῦ ἔναιρ τε; δια ἔναιρ τε

442. The noun "north," etc., is ἀν ταοῦ ἔνδιο, ἀν ταοῦ ἔναις, etc., or τυαιρτεαιρ, τειρτεαιρ, ταιρταιρ, and οιρτεαιρ. These latter words are obsolescent.

443.

The North wind, ἀν ξαοῦτ ἀντυαιο N.W. wind, ξαοῦτ ἀνιαιρ ἀντυαιο  
 „ South „ „ ἀνοεαιρ S.E. wind, ξαοῦτ ἀνοἱρ ἀνοεαιρ  
 „ East „ „ ἀνοἱρ etc., etc.  
 „ West „ „ ἀνιαιρ Notice the change of position in  
 Irish.

444. With reference to a house, ριαρ is *inwards*: ροἱρ is *outwards*.

\* Λεαιρ or Λαιρ may be used. † Probably a corruption of ονταοῦ.

## 445. Compound or Phrase Adverbs.

1 <b>Scéin</b> , far off ( <i>space</i> ).	Δη δον σοη,	}	at all.
1 <b>θρατ</b> , far off ( <i>space and time</i> ).	1 n-δον σοη,		
Δη διτ,	σοη Δη διτ,		
Δη αιτ, back.	σοη Δη αιτ,		
Δη σεύτ, backwards.	σοη λειρ ριν,		moreover.
Δη οτύρ, } at first, or in Δη οτύιρ, } the beginning.	Δη δον Κυμα,	}	at any
Δηνρο, here.	Δη Κυμα Δη διτ,		
Δην ραν (ραιν, ριν), there, then.	Πε ργέατ ε,	}	rate.
Δην ριοη,	Πε πυτ ε,		
1 <b>σcomnuiðe</b> , } always.	1 n-αιργε, gratis.		
σοιðe, ever ( <i>future</i> ).	1 οταιργε, in safe keeping.		
μιατη, ever ( <i>past</i> ).	1 n-αιργεδη, in vain.		
Δη οεο, for ever.	τυιττε ειτε,	}	moreover,
Δη θράτ(ας), for ever.	τυιττε ποτ,		
ρέ (or ρά) όσ, twice.	1 λειτ, apart, aside.		
ρέ (or ρά) ςηρι, thrice.	εαυ αρ?	}	whence?
ρέ (or ρά) ρεας, by turns.	εαη η-αρ?		
1 <b>λάταιη</b> , present.	σε μευ?	}	how much?
Δη λάταιη, absent.	σα μευ?		
Δη λάταιη, presently, just now.	Δη μό?		
θεας ηας,	τε ισ, by day.		
ηας μόη,	ιρτ' οιδε,	}	by night.
θεας λε,	τ' οιδε,		
Δη λειη,	σ θειλε,	}	asunder.
Δη η-ιοηλάη,	σ n-α θειλε,		
	1 n-εινθεας, together.		
	ρέ τυαιριμ, conjecturally.		

εαθον (written οι.),	namely.
ο οιαναιθ,	awhile ago.
ο οιανταιθ,	ages ago.
δο λεοη,	enough.
τ' αρι ηδονις (ηδοις),	sure, surely.
το ξειτ,	
ι γεέανδηιη,	
ιον-λαιτρεας,	
λαιτρεας νονη,	
αρι αι ητοιητ,	
αρι ιαιηιθ,	
ιαιηεανητα,	
ανοιη γ αριη,	
δο ι-άιηιστε,	
δο γονηάδας,	
δο τορηόρη,	
δο ι-υρηόρη,	
αρι ιαλ,	by and bye, after awhile.
νάλα αη γείλορ νάλτα γιάνθ,	by the bye.
ι ι-άιηοε,	on high.
ιορανάιηοε,	at full gallop.
δο νειμην or δο νεαρητα,	indeed.
δο νειμην ιη δο νεαρητα,	
αμβριαταρη γ αμβαρα,	
νά ιηηιθ,	really, in fact.
ιαρι αη γεέανηα,	likewise, in like manner.
ο γοιη ι λειτ,	from that time to this.
ο γοιη αμας,	from that time out.
αρι έιγηη,	hardly, with difficulty, perforce.

an cnuid i f mō ðe,	at most.
an (a) iomad,	
an cnuid i f lusga ðe,	at least.
an a laigead (laigead),	
an a fion ran (i f uile),	notwithstanding (all that).
com fáid 'r (use le before noun)	whilst, as long as.
an fáid (rel. form of verb)	
o' aon gnó,	purposely.
com maiet agur da,	just as if.
le h-éirge an lae,	at dawn.
san coinne le,	unexpectedly.
san fáil le,	
de gnáit (gnáitac),	usually.
mai aca, mar acaid,	namely, viz., i.e.
o' riol,	secretly, lowly.
o' áru,	aloud, openly.
an maiotin,	in the morning.
ra tráctnóna,	in the evening.
um tráctnóna,	
an maiotin inotiu,	this morning.
an maiotin i mbáras,	to-morrow morning.
ra tráctnóna inotiu,	this evening.
atrusgad inoté,	on the day before yesterday
atrusgad i mbáras,	on the day after to-
anoircead, umánoircead,	
lá ari n-a báras,	morrow.
i mbliadóna,	on the following day.
anuirlait,	(during) this year.
atrusgad anuirlait,	(during) last year.
	(during) the year before last

446. The phrases which have just been given about morning, evening, &c., are strictly adverbial, and cannot be used as nouns.

447.

Adverbs.

dia Domnaig, on Sunday  
dia Luain, on Monday  
dia Máirt, on Tuesday  
dia Ceathair, on Wednesday  
dia Ógair, on Thursday  
dia h-Adaine, on Friday  
dia Sathairn, on Saturday

Nouns.

Domnaig, m., Sunday  
Luain, m., Monday  
Máirt, f., Tuesday  
Ceathair, f., Wednesday  
Ógair, f., Thursday  
Adaine, f., Friday  
Sathairn, m., Saturday

448. *Diá* takes the name of the day in the genitive case; it is used only when "on" is, or may be, used in English—i.e., when the word is adverbial.

*Diá* is really an old word for day. It occurs in the two expressions, *n-diú*, to-day; *n-óé*, yesterday. It is now never used except before the names of the days of the week, and in the two expressions just mentioned.

449.

"Head-foremost."

He fell head-foremost, *Do tuit ré i ndiáid\* a cinn.*  
I fell head-foremost, *Do tuitear i ndiáid mo cinn.*  
She fell head-foremost, *Do tuit ri i ndiáid a cinn.*  
They fell head-foremost, *Do tuiteadair i ndiáid a scinn.*

\* *ndiáid* is a phrase meaning "after," and is followed by a genitive case.

## However.

**However** followed in English by an adjective or an adverb is translated into Irish by the preposition **to** (or **te**), the possessive adjective **a**, and an **abstract noun** corresponding to the English adjective or adverb.

However good, **o'á fheadhaf**. However long, **o'á fáid**.  
 However great, **o'á méri**. However violent, **o'á éisgníse**.

However high, **o'á aoiñoe**. However young, **o'á óige**

## The Adverb "The."

The sooner the better,

**o'á luaité 'reao (ir  
amharcló) ir fealpí.**

The longer...the bolder,

**o'á fáid 'reao ir tána.**

The sooner...the less,

**o'á luaité 'reao ir luig.**

## CHAPTER VII.

## Prepositions.

**450.** The following list contains the simple prepositions in use in modern Irish:—

<b>i</b> , <b>a</b> , <b>in</b> , (ann) <b>in</b> .	go, to ( <i>motion</i> ).
<b>as</b> , ( <b>ais</b> ), <b>at</b> .	<b>poim</b> , before.
<b>ar</b> , ( <b>air</b> ), <b>on</b> .	<b>roip</b> , between.
<b>ar</b> , <b>out of</b> .	<b>te</b> , with.
<b>tar</b> , <b>by</b> ( <i>in swearing</i> ).	<b>o</b> , from.
<b>te</b> , <b>off</b> , <b>from</b> .	<b>tar</b> , { over, across.
<b>to</b> , <b>to</b> .	<b>tar</b> , { through.
<b>fe</b> , <b>faoi</b> , <b>fó</b> , <b>fá</b> , <b>under</b> .	<b>um</b> , <b>im</b> , concerning, about.
<b>san</b> , <b>without</b> .	

## CHAPTER VIII.

## Conjunctions.

451. The following is a list of the conjunctions in use at present:—

de əpīs ȝo	because.	mā, ȝā, if.
ȝaoi ȝāð 'r ȝo,		muṇa, muṇa, if...not.
cion ȝr,		ȝiðeað, however.
cion ȝr ȝo,	moreover.	ċor leir ȝin,
āct, but, except.		ȝuð eile (ȝe),
ȝasur (a'ȝ, ȝr, 'r), and.		tuille ȝor,
riður...ȝasur, both...and.		tuille eile,
an (aȝ), whether (interrog.)		mār, as.
aȝ a ȝon ȝo,		nā, than ; nor.
riður ȝr ȝo,		ȝo (ȝasur), that.
cioð, ȝið,		mār ȝr ȝo, as though.
cē ȝo, ȝið ȝo,		1 ȝat̄eo ȝo (nāc),
ȝo,		aȝ nōr ȝo (nāc),
nō ȝo,		aȝ ȝoð ȝo (nāc),
āct ȝo,		1 ȝcār ȝo (nāc),
ȝo ȝt̄i ȝo,		aȝ ȝor ȝo (nāc),
com̄ luat̄ aȝ,		aȝ ȝor ȝo (nāc),
ȝā luaf̄ ȝ,		1 ȝcaoi ȝo (nāc),
an tuirge ȝo,		ionnur ȝo (nāc),*
ȝor, yet, still.		reacār, compared with.
ruł; ȝap̄,		nō, or.
ruł a ȝt̄i,		ō, since, because.
ruł mā ȝt̄i,		ō nāc, since...not.
ruł ȝā ȝt̄i,		oīr, for, because.

\* ȝo and nāc are very frequently separated from ionnur by a subordinate or relative clause: e.g., “ionnur, an ȝt̄i aȝ a mbiāð an ȝiðin ȝin, ȝo mbiāð teagmann aige ó'n oiflead;” so that the person who would be marked with that sign would have protection from the slaughter.

maiþeadó, well, if so.	ó tárta go, whereas.
uime rín, therefore, where-	tar: ceann, moreover, be-
fore.	sides, furthermore.
ári an áðbári rán, therefore.	nac
maiþ rín fém, even so.	ná, ná go, } that...not.
bíod go, although, whether	
...or.	

452. In Munster "that...not" is usually translated by **nā** followed by the dependent form of the verb. **nā** neither aspirates nor eclipses. In the past tense it becomes **nāp** which causes aspiration. Whenever "that...not" follows a negative (or a *virtual* negative) phrase, **nā** **go** is used (**nā** **gup** in the past tense).

Tá fíor aige féin ná fail an ceapt aige. He knows himself that he is not right.

“Ni deirim (or deirim) ná go bhfuil an ceapt aige.  
I don’t say that he is not right.

nāc is used in Munster as a part of the verb *is*.

453. The use of **MAR** before a clause is noteworthy.

Fā man aṭubait rē, (according) as he said.

ταν μαν βι βειδη μιβλιαδηα φιεαδ ο φοιν.

Beyond (or compared with) how it was 30 years ago.

1 οταοῦ μαρ τειρ τú, regarding what you say.

Táinig sé mar a phairb Fionn. He came to where Finn was.

maipi atá or map atáin, that is, viz., i.e.

mapi go mbaó iad Féin do Óenamh an  
Gníomha, as if it were they who per-  
formed the act.

mapi an gceudana, likewise.

mapi gseall ar, on account of.

## CHAPTER IX.

### 454. Interjections and Interjectional Phrases.

A,

O (the sign of the Vocative  
case).

Eirt,

hush! list!

Fáiríor!

Fáiríor!

Mo bhrón!

Mo creibh!

Mo téan!

Mo téan geup!

Peuc!

Ó bá bá! oc! ué! ucón!

Mo náipe tú!

. . . a bá!

Fáilte nómád!

Alas!

Behold! lo!

Alas!

Shame on you!

Hurrah for . . . !

Welcome!

ÓÍA DO BEATA!	Hail!
'SÉ DO BEATA!	
SLÁN LEAT (LÍB)!	
SLÁN BEO AGAT (AGAIB)!	Good-bye!
BEANNÁCHT LEAT (LÍB)!	
ÓÍA LINN!	God be with us!
MÁIREAD!	Well! Musha!
FÓIGÍD (FÓIGNE)!	Patience!
FÁIRÉ!	Take care! Fie!
SO NTÉIRÍD TÚ RLÁN!	Safe home!
SO RÓIPÍSÍD ÓÍA ÓUÍT!	God prosper you!
DI 'DO CORT!	Silence!
EIRT DO BEUL!	
MO GSÓILIM TÚ!	Bravo!
SÚD OÍRT!	Good health!
SLÁINTE!	
MÁIT AN FEARÍ!	Good man!
MÁIT AN BUACAILL!	Good fellow!
ÓIRDEACÁR LEAT!	Thanks! thank you!
SO RLÁB MÁIT AGAT!	
SO N-ÉIRÍSÍD ÁD LEAT!	Good luck to you!
NÁP LÉIGÍD ÓÍA RLÍN!	God forbid!
SO MBÉANNÁSÍD ÓÍA ÓUÍT!	God save you! Good morning! &c.
SO MÁIRÍR,	Long life to you!
SO MÁIRÍD TÚ!	
SO ÓFRDÍRÍD ÓÍA OÍRÍNN!	God help us!
OÍRÓCÉ MÁIT ÓUÍT!	May you have a good night!
SO NTUÍGAIÐ ÓÍA OÍRÓCÉ MÁIT ÓUÍT!	May God give you a good night!

Go mbuaðair Óia leat !	God grant you success !
Slán cordaile na h-oiríce aSáat !	Sound night's sleep to you !
Go gcoirlainn go rám !	May you sleep peacefully.
Baile ó Óia oírt !	God bless you !
Cuirdeáchan Dé leat !	May God accompany you !
Faoi raoisair aSáat !	Long life to you !
Buaidh leat !	Success to you !
Raet go náibh oírt !	
'Seád !	Well !
'Seád anoir !	There now !
Cosáid i leit !	Whisper (here) !
Ambará !	Indeed !
mo ghráidín cíoríde tú !	Bravo !
A curio !	My dear !
Ach ariðe !	Dear me !

## CHAPTER X.

## WORD-BUILDING.

## Prefixes.

**455.** The following is a list of the principal prefixes used in Irish. Some of them have double forms owing to the rule **caol le caol**.

αιρ or ειρ, back, again; like the English *re-* ;  
 ιοc, payment; αιριοc, repayment, restitu-  
 tion.

αm or αιm,	Negative particles	νέιρō, even ; αιμπέριο, un- even.
αn „ αιn,		τριτ, time ; 1 n-αντηλάτ, un- timely.
οi „ οio,*		ceαm, a head ; οιceαnnαd to behead.
mi „ mio,		coμαιτε, an advice ; mio- coμαιτε, an evil advice.
νεαm „ νειm,		νιρō, a thing ; νειμνιρō, no- thing, non-entity.
εαr,		εαιριoeαr, friendship ; εαr- εαιρioeαr, enmity.

ε or εa, a negative particle. It eclipses c and τ and becomes εαg before r. Σοιr, just; εαgcoiρ, unjust; τρiom, heavy; εαντρiom, light; coμaiτ, like; εuγρaμaiτ, different.

τρiοc, bad, evil; meaρ, esteem; τρiοc-neaρ, reproach, disesteem.

com, equal; αιmriр, time; coм-αιmreαnαc, contem-  
porary.

\* οi, οio eclipse words beginning with b or p, οiombuioeαc, ingratitudo.

an,	Intensifying particles	mōr, big; an-mōr, very big.
il, iol,		dat, a colour; iol-datāc, many-coloured.
riō,		mōr, big; riō-mōr, too big.
rāp,		te, warm; rāp-te, excessively warm
lān,		aiōbēl, vast; lān-aiōbēl, awfully vast.
ūp,		ḡlānōa, ugly; ūp-ḡlānōa, very ugly.

teat, a half; teat-uaip, half an hour; r̄geul, a story; teit-r̄geul, an excuse.

in, ion, fit, suitable; veunta, done; in-veunta, fit to be done; r̄aiōte, said; ion-r̄aiōte, fit to be said; ion-molta, praiseworthy; ion-olta, drinkable; in-icte, eatable, edible. (See pars. 286, 288.)

neum, before; r̄aiōte, said; neum-r̄aiōte, aforesaid.

r̄nit, back; r̄nit-teat, coming and going; r̄nit-ūsalaō, palpitation, or a return stroke.

ban, a feminine prefix; plait, a prince; ban-plait, a princess; bain-tīseapna, a lady.

at, a reiterative particle: r̄āt, a saying; at-r̄āt, a repetition; atuaip, another time; an atb̄iaatāin, next year; an atfeadct̄mai, next week. At has sometimes the force of "dis" in dismantle, as cumaō, to form;

αττυμασθ, to deform, destroy; πιοσαθ, to crown, to elect a king; αττιοσαθ, to de-throne.

βιτ, βιοτ, lasting, constant; βιων, lasting; βιοτ-βιων, everlasting; βιτ-φιρευν, ever-faithful.

νο and ρο, two particles which have directly opposite meanings, as have often the letters ν and ρ.  
Νο denotes *difficulty, ill, or the absence of some good quality*; ρο denotes the opposite.

νο-θευντα, hard to be done	ρο-θευντα, easy to be done
νοιλαρ, sorrow	ροιλαρ, comfort, joy
νοναρ, bad-luck	ροναρ, good-luck
νουθαс, sad	ρουθαс, merry
ναιροβир, poor	ραιρовир, rich
ναοι, a fool	ραοι, a wise man
νιτ, want, misery	ρит, peace, plenty
νουβαιце, vice	ρубайце, virtue
ναοр, condemned, dear	ρаор, free, cheap
νοслар, harm	ρослар, profit
νона, unlucky, unhappy	ρона, lucky, happy
νоинейн, bad weather	ρоинейн, fine weather
νоисатай, inconvenient	ρоисатай, convenient

#### 456. Affixes or Terminations.

αс, when it is the termination of an adjective, means full of, abounding in: νηιатар, a word; νηιатнас, wordy, talkative; ρеурас, grassy.

ac, when it is the termination of a noun, denotes a person or personal agent: as Éireannac, an Irishman; Albaṇac, a Scotchman.

act is an abstract termination, like the English -ness: milir, sweet; milreac̄t, sweetness.

N.B.—The termination -act is usually added to adjectives.

airde, urde, rde, are personal terminations denoting an agent: r̄geul, a story; r̄geulurde, a story-teller; cor, a foot; coirde, a pedestrian.

aire, ipe, are also personal terminations denoting an agent: ceal̄s, deceit; ceal̄gaire, a deceiver.

ail, a termination having the very same force as the English *like* or *ly*: feamhail, manly; fiaiteamhail, princely, generous.

ar, ear, or sometimes r̄ alone, an abstract termination like act: maist, good; maitear, goodness; ceann, a head; ceannar, headship, authority.

ar and ip̄e have a collective force: as, ouille, a leaf (of a tree); ouillearar, foliage.

ar, ta, or ta, is an adjectival termination which has usually the force of the English *like*: morða, majestic; orða, golden; gallta, exotic, foreign (from gall, a stranger, a foreigner).

ē is an abstract termination like acht or ar: whenever it is added to an adjective the resulting abstract noun, owing to the rule "caol i le caol," has the very same form as the *genitive singular feminine of the adjective*: as, ríat, generous; réile, generosity; Árro, high; áirroe, height; geat, bright; gile, brightness; áilne, beauty.

lac, nacl, nacl, tlacl, tlacl, have all the same meaning as ač, viz., full of, abounding in: muc, a pig; muclac, a piggery; coill, a wood; coilleac, a place full of woods; ruilteac, bloody; tolteac (tolteannac), willing.

mar means *full of, abounding in*: ceol, music; ceolmar, musical; gneann, fun; gneannmar, full of fun, amusing; ciallmar, sensible, intelligent.

oir, dooir, or tooir, denotes a *personal agent*: rpeal, a scythe; rpealadoir, a mower, reaper; dooirgeoir, a door-keeper.

### Diminutives.

457. In Irish there are three diminutive terminations, viz., in, an, and os. However, in is practically the only diminutive termination in Modern Irish as an and os have almost lost their diminutive force. A double diminutive is sometimes met with, as Árdoainin, *a very little height*.

## Ín.

458. The termination **ÍN**, meaning "small" or "little," may be added to almost every Irish noun. Whenever the final consonant is broad it must be made slender (as the **ÍN** always remains unaltered), the vowels undergoing the same changes as in the formation of the genitive singular, but **C** is not changed into **S** (see pars. 60 and 78).

áfar, an ass	áfarlin, a little ass
fear, a man	fírin, a „ man
soírt, a field	suírtín, a „ field
cailleach, an old woman	caillicín, a „ old woman
ríordán, a street	ríordánin, a „ street, a lane

If the noun ends in **E**, drop the **E** and add **ÍN**; but if the noun ends in **A**, drop the **A** and attenuate the preceding consonant; then add **ÍN**.

páirte **páirtoin** Nóra **Nóriín** mala **máilin**

## 459.

## Án.

riubhán, a brook,	from riubh, a stream.
árhoán, a hillock,	„ árho, high.
tealgsán, a knitting-needle,	„ tealgs, a thorn.
biophán, a pin,	„ bioph, a spit.
teabhrán, a booklet,	„ teabhr, a book.
seusgán, a twig,	„ seusg, a branch.
toċán, a little lake,	„ toċ, a lake.
rgiastán, a wing,	„ rgiast, a shield.

The above are examples of real diminutives, but such examples are not very numerous.

460.

65.

piartos (péirteos), a worm, from piart, a reptile.

taros, a match, „ tar, a light.

gablos, a little fork, „ gabal, a fork.

These are examples of real diminutives in 65, but such real diminutives are not numerous, as most nouns in 65 have practically the same meaning as the nouns from which they were derived (the latter being now generally obsolete): cuileos, a fly, from cuil, a fly; torpeos, a briar, from torp, a briar; fuinnreos, an ash, from fuinnre, an ash.

In Craig's Grammar we find lucos, a rat (luc, a mouse). This example is a striking instance of the fact that the termination 65 is losing (if it has not already lost) its diminutive force.

All derived nouns in 65 are feminine.

### Derived Nouns.

461. Words are of three classes—Simple, Derivative, and Compound. All simple words are, as a general rule, monosyllables; they are the roots from which derivative and compound words spring. Derivative words are made up of two or more parts. These parts undergo slight changes when they are united to form words, and thus the component parts are somewhat disguised. The difficulty which presents itself to a student in the spelling of Irish is more apparent than real. The principle of vowel-assimilation is the key to

Irish spelling. Let a student once thoroughly grasp the rules for “caol te caol, &c,” “aspiration,” “eclipsis,” “attenuation,” and “syncope,” and immediately all difficulty vanishes.

Derivatives are formed of simple words and particles. The most important of the latter have been already given under the headings “Prefixes” and “Affixes.” We will here give some examples of derivative nouns, a careful study of which will enable the student to split up the longest words into their component parts, and thus arrive at their meanings.

462. τρομ means heavy; τρομαρ, *i.e.*, τρομ+αρ (the abstract termination) means heaviness or weight; έαυττρομ, light, from τρομ, and the negative particle έα, which eclipses c and τ, hence the ρ; έαυττρομαρ, lightness, from έα, not; τρομ, heavy; αρ, ness; comτρομ, impartial, fair, or just; from com, equal, and τρομ, heavy; comτρομαρ, impartiality, fairness, &c.; έαγcomτρομ, partial, unjust; from έα+com+τρομ; έαγcomτρομαρ, partiality, injustice; from έα+com+τρομ+αρ. Σπειλαυσίρ, a reaper; from ρpeal, a scythe, and ρσίρ, an affix denoting an agent; the α is put in between the i and ρ to assist pronunciation: cάιροε, friends; cάιροεαρ, friendliness, friendship; ευγcάιροεαρ, unfriendliness, hostility: ρεαμανταст, manliness; from ρεαρ + αναι + αст: neim-ξεαναιнтаст, unamiability; from neim, not + ξεαн, affection + αнαι + αст: πιοξαст, a

kingdom, from  $\pi\text{io}\dot{\text{s}} + \alpha\text{ct}$ : *comōrtař*, comparison, emulation, competition; from *co* (*com*), equal, and *mōrtař*, greatness, *i.e.*, comparing the greatness of one thing with that of another.

**463.** Compound nouns are formed by the union of two or more simple nouns, or of a noun and an adjective.

(A.) A compound noun formed of two or more nouns, each in the nominative case, has its declension determined by the last noun. Its gender also is that of the last noun, unless the first noun-part be such as requires a different gender. The first word qualifies the second, and the initial consonant of the second is *usually* aspirated.

(B.) If the compound is formed of a noun in the nominative form followed by a genitive noun, the first is the principal noun, and determines the declension and gender; the second qualifies the first, and generally remains unaltered, and the aspiration of the initial consonant in this case depends on the gender of the first noun. See par. 21(f).

We will give here a few examples of the two chief kinds of compound nouns. It is usual to employ a hyphen between the nouns in Class A, but not in Class B.

## 464.

## Class A.

θρευς-νι, a pseudo king	θρευς, a lie, and νι, a king
θυν-ρρυτ, a fountain	θυν, a source, origin, and ρρυτ, a stream
κατ-θάρη, a helmet	κατ, a battle, and θάρη, top, head
ελαρ-ρολαρ, twilight	
ελοις-τεας, a belfry	ελοις, a clock, bell, and τεας, a house
εραοθ-ριελρ, a garland	εραοθ, a branch, and ριελρ, a wreath
καλ-καιντ, back-biting	κατ, the back of the head, and καιντ, talk
καοιη-ρεοιη, mutton	ρεοιη, flesh; καοη, a sheep
λαοις-ρεοιη, veal	λαοη, a calf; με, a pig
μυις-ρεοιη, pork, bacon	μαη, a beef
μαιητ-ρεοιη, beef	
λαη-θια, a household god	
λαη-ευρας, a handker- chief, a napkin	λαη, a hand; θια, God; ευρας, a cloth; ορο, a sledge
λαη-ορο, a hand-sledge	
λειτ-ργειτ,* an excuse	τεας, a half, and ργειτ, a story
ση-ριατ, a sceptre; ση, gold; and ριατ, a rod	
τηη-ξηαθ, patriotism; τηη, country; and ξηαθ, love	

\* Σαδ μο λειτ-ργειτ I beg your pardon. (Lit. Accept my excuse).

465.

## Class B.

b̄rat t̄aire, a winding-sheet (a garment of death).

fear̄ ceoil, a musician (a man of music).

fear̄ fear̄a, a seer (a man of knowledge; f̄ior, gen. fear̄a).

fear̄ t̄ige, a householder (a man of a house).

mac t̄ige, a wolf (son of (the) country).

cū m̄ara, an otter (a hound of the sea; m̄uir, gen m̄ara).

taos̄ m̄ara, a seal (a calf of the sea).

fear̄ ionair, a lieutenant, vicegerent (a man of place).

teac̄ órta, an inn, hotel (a house of entertainment).

mais̄-f̄irtin̄ r̄coite, a schoolmaster (a master of a school).

ub̄ c̄ipse, a hen-egg (an egg of a hen.)

bean̄ r̄iðe or bean̄ t̄-r̄iðe, a fairy (a woman of the r̄ið, a fairy hill).

## 466. A Noun and an Adjective.

árl̄o-ri, a high king.

árl̄o-t̄igeárl̄na, a sovereign lord.

árl̄o-riéim, supreme power, chief power.

cl̄eon-óreit, partiality; cl̄eon, inclined: and óreit, a judgment.

c̄rom-teac̄, a druidical altar; c̄rom, bent; and teac̄, a stone, flag.

ðaor̄-óreit, condemnation; ðaor̄, condemned.

ðaor̄-ósl̄ac̄, a bond-slave; ósl̄ac̄, a servant.

τεαρθράταιρ (τεαρθ-θρά- ταιρ), a brother by blood	τεαρθ, real or true. θράταιρ and τιύρ, brother and sister (in reli- gion).
τειρθριύρ, a sister by blood.	
φιορ-υιρζε, spring water: φιορ, true, pure; υιρζε, water.	
δαιρθ-ριον, a tempest: δαιρθ, rough; and ριον, weather.	
τιρη-ριαθ, a hare: τεαρη, short; and ριαθ, a deer.	
νιαδό-τυινε, an upstart: νιαδό, new, fresh; and τυινε, a person.	
ρεαν-αταιρ, a grandfather, ρεαν-ρεαν-αταιρ (ρέ-ρεαν- αταιρ), a great grand- father.	ρεαν, old; αταιρ, a father. μάταιρ, a mother; αοιρ, age.
ρεαν-μάταιρ, a grand- mother.	ρεαςτ, law; τοιζε is a more common word for law.
ρεαν-αοιρ, old age.	
ρεαν-ρεαςτ, the old law.	
τρεун-ρεαρ, a brave man.	
τρεун-ταοс, a hero.	
ραοр-ρεалт, a freehold: ρεалт, possession.	
τρом-луиже, a nightmare.	
սարս-αտαιր, a patriarch.	
բաօին-ծալլ, folly, silliness: բաօօ, silly; and ծալլ, sense	
բօր-Ծիսաւը, an adverb: բօր, before; and Ծիսաւը, a word.	
բօր-լուսալլ, a frontier, extremity; լուսալլ, a border, a hem.	
բօր-Ծրեւէտ, a prejudice (a fore-judgment).	
բօր-ուսարտ, violence.	
բօր-եւզեան, oppression, compulsion.	

## Formation of Adjectives.

467. (a) Adjectives may be formed from many nouns by the addition of *āc* or *eaāc*, which signifies *full of, abounding in*. All these adjectives belong to the first declension, and are declined like *oīreāc*.

NOUN.	ADJECTIVE.
reār̄s, anger	reār̄sāc, angry
ruīl, blood	ruīlēāc, bloody
reūr̄, grass	reūr̄āc, grassy
buār̄ō, victory	buār̄āc, victorious
oīreus̄, a lie	oīreus̄āc, false, lying
oīceall̄, one's best endeavour	oīceall̄āc, energetic
reār̄am̄, standing	reār̄māc, steadfast
Snō, work	Snōtāc, busy
clū, fame	clūtēāc, famous
raočar̄, toil	raočr̄āc, industrious
lūb̄, a loop	lūbāc, deceitful
raočal̄, life	raočl̄āc, long-lived
rāit̄, sufficiency	rāt̄āc, satiated
Alba, Scotland	Albanāc, Scotch
Sac̄raīn, England	Sac̄raīnāc, English
cr̄aoθ̄, branch	cr̄aoθ̄āc, branchy
car̄rais̄, a rock	car̄rais̄āc, rocky
oīr̄ón, sorrow	oīr̄ónāc, sorrowful
rał̄, dirt	rał̄āc, dirty
riɔ̄r̄, knowledge	riɔ̄r̄āc, intelligent
ātar̄, joy	ātar̄āc, joyous
voił̄sioř̄, sorrow	voił̄sioř̄āc, sorrowful

NOUN.	ADJECTIVE.
clear, a trick	clearac, tricky
cuipre, weariness	cuipreac, weary
uirse, water	uirseac, watery
neut, a cloud	neutac, cloudy
teanþ, a child	teanþac, childish
gæot, wind	gæotac, windy
imniðe, anxiety	imniðeac, anxious
cumðac, power	cumðac, powerful
neult, a star	neultac, starry
aipæ, care	aipæac, attentive
foiðr, patience	foiðræac, patient
easla, fear	easlaac, timid
toil, a will	toilteanac, willing
cumram, heed	cumramac, careful
tomarcia, too much	tomarcia, excessive, copious

(b). Many adjectives are formed by adding *mar* to nouns.

All these adjectives belong to the first declension and are declined like *mör*.

NOUN.	ADJECTIVE.
ðo, luck	ðomari, lucky.
ceol, music	ceolmar, musical
ciall, sense	ciallmar, sensible
feuþ, grass	feuþmar, grassy
feoil, flesh	feoilmari, fleshy
fonn, fancy	fonnmar, desirous

## NOUN.

Տօնի, glory
Տրեան, fun
Լուծ, price, value
Լուն, number
Նեարտ, strength
Րշատ, a shadow
Լուտ, activity

## ADJECTIVE.

Տօնուար, glorioue
Տրեանուար, funny
Լուծուար, valuable
Լունուար, numerous
Նեարտուար, powerful
Րշատուար, shy, startled
Լուտուար, active, nimble

(c). Very many adjectives are formed from nouns by the addition of **անալ** or **եամալ** (both pronounced oo-il or u-wil). All these adjectives belong to the third declension.

## NOUN.

Պար, a man
Պեան, a woman
Պլաւ, a prince
Անոմ, a name
Մեար, esteem
Լա (pl. Լաւե), a day
Հրան, hatred
Հարօ (pl. Հարուօ), a friend
Նամա (pl. Նամուօ), an enemy
Հրօւծե, a heart
Բի (gen. Բիօց), a king
Հաօ (pl. Հաօւե), a way
Մար, order
Հեան, affection
Մոծ, manner

## ADJECTIVE.

Պարամալ, manly
Պեանամալ, womanly
Պլաւեամալ, generous
Անուեամալ, renowned
Մեարամալ, estimable
Լաւեամալ, daily
Հրանուեամալ, hateful
Հարօւեամալ, friendly
Նամուեամալ, hostile
Հրօւծեամալ, hearty, gay
Բիօցամալ, kingly, royal
Հաօւեամալ, opportune
Մարամալ, subject, docile
օbedient
Հեանամալ, affectionate
Մոծամալ, mannerly

NOUN.	ADJECTIVE.
teip (pl. tioip̄a), country	tioip̄at̄ail, country-like, homely, social
meirnead̄, { mirnead̄, courage	mirnead̄ail, courageous
teime (pl. teimte), fire	teimteam̄ail, fiery, igneous
riab̄, (pl. riéib̄te), a moun- tain	riéib̄team̄ail, mountain- ous
griean, fun	grieanam̄ail, funny, gay
eun, a bird	eunam̄ail, bird-like, airy
comuirra, a neighbour	comuirram̄ail, neighbourly
varant̄ar, authority	varant̄am̄ail, authentic

(d). There is a fourth class of adjectives formed by the termination **DA** (ÓA); but it is not as large as the three preceding classes. The following are some of the principal ones:—

daid̄a, godly, divine	daona (daonra) human
feaird̄a, masculine	grianc̄a, ugly
banra, feminine	cród̄a, brave
órl̄a, golden, gilt	beoða, lively
laoc̄a, heroic	gall̄a, exotic or foreign
reanaða, ancient	naom̄ta (naom̄ða), holy saintly

Compound adjectives are extremely common in Irish, being usually formed by the union of two or more simple adjectives (sometimes of a noun and an

adjective); but these compound adjectives present no difficulty once the simple adjectives have been mastered.

### FORMATION OF VERBS.

468. Verbs can be readily formed from nouns and adjectives by the addition of *is* or *uiſ*. The addition of this termination is sometimes accompanied by syncope, which often necessitates slight vowel changes in accordance with the rule “*caol te caol*.”

#### 469. (a). Verbs derived from Nouns.

NOUN.	VERB (Stem).
ainm, a name	ainmnis, name
beata, life	beatuis, nourish
cumne, memory	cumnis, remember
curo, a part	cuidis te, assist (take part with)
cúl, the back of the head	cúluis, retire
raostar, exertion	raostuis, exert
cuairt, a visit	cuairtuis, visit, search
tear, improvement	tearuis, improve
neart, strength	neartuis, strengthen
act, a decree	actuis, decree, enact
bár, death	báruis, put to death
cáit, a battle	cáituis, contend, fight
céim, a step	céimnis, step, advance
cpioic, an end	cpioenuis, finish
cpuit, a trembling	cpuituis, tremble

## NOUN.

σορτα,	hunger, injury
ιόματο,	multitude
σητο,	an order
ροτοτ,	a light
ταρ (τορ),	a beginning
τρεοιτη,	a guide
πιαν,	pain
οβαιτη,	work

## VERB (Stem).

σορταιγ,	injure
ιοματαιγ,	multiply
σηταιγ,	order, command
ροταιγ,	enlighten
ταραιγ,	begin
τρεοιταιγ,	guide, lead
πιαναιγ,	cause pain
οβαιταιγ,	work

## (b). Verbs derived from Adjectives.

## ADJECTIVE.

αρτο,	high
βαν,	white
τυν,	black
νοθαρ,	deaf
νιαν,	lasting
ροτταιρ,	apparent
ρυαρι,	cold
ταγ,	weak
ριαν,	well
τιριμ,	dry
νοετ,	poor
ceαρτ,	right
μιν,	fine
ιριοτ,	low
υματ,	humble
ραινθιρ,	rich

	VERB (Stem).
	αρταιγ,
	ρυαναιγ,
	ταναιγ,
	τυνθαιγ,
	νοθαιγ,
	νιαναιγ,
	ροτταιγ,
	ρυαραιγ,
	ταγαιγ,
	ριαναιγ,
	τιριμαιγ,
	νοεταιγ,
	ceαρταιγ,
	μιναιγ,
	ιριοταιγ,
	υματαιγ,
	ραινθιραιγ,

The compound verbs are very few, and are therefore of little consequence to the beginner.

**PART III.—SYNTAX.****CHAPTER I.****The Article.**

**470.** In Irish the article always precedes its noun, and agrees with it in gender, number and case as, *an peapá*, the man; *na fir*, the men; *an fír*, of the man; *na mná*, of the woman.

**471.** When one noun governs another in the genitive case the article cannot be used with the first noun: as, *mac an fír*, *the son of the man*; *fear an tíse*, *the man of the house*, &c.

Notice the difference between *the son of the man*, *mac an fír*, and *a son of the man*, *mac do'n fear*.

**Exceptions.** (1) When a demonstrative adjective is used with the first noun (the governing one), the article must also be used; as, *tá an teach rámh mo cásair leis*, *that house of my friend's is for sale*.

(2) If the two nouns form a compound word, the article is used before the first, if used in English: *a newspaper*, *páipear públídeachta*; but, *the newspaper*, *an páipear públídeachta*.

(3) When the noun in the genitive case is an indefinite\* one, *which denotes a part of something, the material of which a thing is made, or the contents of the first noun*, the article is used with the first noun when it is used in English :—

an ghréim aghaidh, the piece of bread.

an málá mine, the bag of meal.

an earráigín uisce, the little jug of water.

We say *blar aghaidh*, for, the taste of bread ; *bolat eirg*, the smell of fish ; *mac ríos*, the son of a king ; because if the noun in the genitive expresses quality, connection, or origin, the governing noun does not take the article.

**472.** If a nominative be followed by several genitives the article can be used only with the last (if “the” be used in English), as, *táuime cinn an capaill*, the weight of the horse’s head.

The article is often omitted before a noun which is antecedent to a relative clause ; as, *l’ é tuine do b’ ann*. He is the person who was there.

**473.** In the following cases the definite article is frequently used in Irish though not used in English.

(1) Before surnames, when not preceded by a Christian name, as, *Raibh an Óreatnach ann?* Was Walsh there ?

(2) **Before the names of some countries**, as, *an Spáinn*, Spain; *an Frainc*, France; *ní na h-Éireann*, the king of Ireland: also before Rome, *'ran Róimh*, in Rome; *ó'n Róimh*, from Rome. The article is not used before the names of Ireland, England or Scotland in the nominative and dative cases.

(3) **Before abstract nouns**: *an t-octráir*, hunger. *Ír mait an t-annláinn an t-octráir.* Hunger is a good sauce.

We frequently use *an tár* for "death."

The article is not used in such sentences, as:—

*Tá octráir orm.* I am hungry.

(4) **Before nouns qualified by the demonstrative adjectives**: *an peárthain*, that man; *an bhean ro*, this woman.

(5) **Before adjectives used as nouns**:

*an mait agus an t-olt*, goodness and badness.

*Ír feairí liom an glear ná an dearg.* I prefer green to red.

(6) **After "Cé" meaning "which" or "what."**

*Cé an peár?* Which man?

*Cé an leabhar?* What book?

(7) **To translate "apiece," "per" or "a" before words expressing weight and measure;**

*Raol an ceann.* Sixpence apiece.

In speaking of *a period of time* *ra* (*in* *an*) is used: as, *uairiú rí a mbliadhán*, once a year.

## (8). Before titles :

Δn τ-αταιρ Εογάν Ήα Σμαννα. Father Eugene O'Growney.

Δn τ-αταιρ Ρεαναρ Ήα Λαογαρε. Father Peter O'Leary.

Δn νοεταιρ Τουβγλαρ Ήε ή-ίοε. Dr. Douglas Hyde.

## (9) To express any attribute :

Δ θεαν ήα τοτρί μβο. O woman of three cows.

(10) The article is used before the word denoting the use to which a thing is put, or the place where a thing is found or produced.

μάλα ήα μίνε. The meal bag, *i.e.*, the bag for holding meal.

Χρύτρσιν Δn υίρζε. The water-jug.

Compare these with the following :—

Δn μάλα μίνε. The bag of meal.

Δn χρύτρσιν υίρζε. The jug of water.

## (11) Before the word "υίτε" meaning "every."

Δn υίτε Ρεαρ. Every man.

Δn υίτε τίρ. Every country.

(12) Whenever an indefinite noun, accompanied by an adjective is predicated of a pronoun by means of the verb ιρ, the definite article must be used with the noun whenever the adjective is placed immediately after the verb.

Ιρ υρεάς Δn ία ε. It is a fine day.

Ιρ μαίτ Δn Ρεαρ τύ. You are a good man.

(18) Before the names of seasons, months, days of the week (when not preceded by the word *oé*).

Án é an Satharín atá agaínn? Is to-day Saturday?

Án iníonu an Luan? }  
Án é seo an Luan? } Is this Monday?

Iníonu an Aoine. To-day is Friday.

## CHAPTER II

### The Noun.

**474.** In Irish one noun governs another in the genitive case, and the governed noun comes after the governing one.

Céann an capaill. The horse's head.

The noun, *capaill*, in the genitive case is aspirated by the article because it is masculine gender. It would not be aspirated if it were feminine. (See par. 40.)

**475.** When the governed noun in the genitive is a proper name it is generally aspirated, whether it be masculine or feminine, although the article is not used.

Peann Máire. Mary's pen.

Leabhar Seagáin. John's book.

The last rule is by no means generally true of *place names*.

**476.** When the noun in genitive case has the force of an adjective, it is not preceded by the article, but its initial consonant is subject to precisely the same rules, with regard to aspiration and eclipsis, as if it were a simple adjective, *i.e.*, it is aspirated if the governing noun be nominative or accusative singular feminine, or genitive singular masculine. It is eclipsed if the governing noun be in the genitive plural.

uð círce, a hen-egg (an egg of a hen)

uibe círce, of a hen-egg.

fean̄ ceoil, a musician.

fír̄ ceoil, of a musician.

na ӯfean̄ gceoil, of the musicians.

**477. Apposition** has almost entirely disappeared in modern Irish, the second noun being now usually in the nominative case, no matter what the case of the first may be.

**478. A noun used adjectively in English is translated into Irish by the genitive case.**

A gold ring, fáinne óir̄ (lit. a ring of gold).

A hen-egg, uð círce.

Oatmeal, min̄ coirce.

**479. Collective nouns** (except in their own plurals) always take the article and qualifying adjectives in the singular; they *sometimes* take a plural pronoun, and may take a plural verb.

Τάνγαναρι ἀν θυρίδαν ευράθ ριν το ιάταιρ φίνν αγαρ  
το θεαννυις ριαθ το. That company of warriors  
came into the presence of Finn, and saluted him  
(lit. to him).

**480.** Nouns denoting fulness or a part of anything are usually followed by the preposition το and the dative case, but the genitive is also used.

ceann (or γαθαρι) τ' ἀρ ηγαθηις, one of our hounds.  
bárr mo ὑροισε, the top of my shoe.  
tán mo όυιρη, the full of my fist.

In phrases such as "some of us," "one of them," &c., "of us," "of them," &c., are usually translated by αγαίνη, ασα, &c.; but τίνη, τίοθ, &c., may also be used.

**481.** The personal numerals from τίαρ to τάρευς inclusive (see par. 177) generally take their nouns in the genitive plural: τειρτ μας, two sons; ηαονθαρ φεαρι, nine men (lit. two of sons, nine of men).

Δ τειρτ μας αγαρ α τειρτηρ βαν.  
His three sons and their three wives.

**482.** When used partitively they take το with the dative.

Βάιρο ρέ ηαονθαρ τίοθ φά 'n τος.  
He drowned nine of them under the lake.  
ηαοι ηαονθαρ το μαοραιο ηα η-Ειρεανη.  
Nine times nine of the stewards of Erin.

### Personal Nouns.

**483.** An Irish name consists of two parts, the *anúin* (or simply *anú*), which corresponds to the English Christian name, and the *príomhneadh*, the surname or family name.

Surnames were first used in Ireland about the eleventh century; until that time every Irish personal name was significant, and sometimes rendered more so by the application of some epithet. "In the early ages individuals received their names from epithets implying some personal peculiarity, such as colour of hair, complexion, size, figure, certain accidents of deformity, mental qualities, such as bravery, fierceness, &c." Joyce's "Irish Names of Places."

**484.** When the Christian name is used in addressing a person, it is always in the vocative case, and preceded by the particle *Δ*, which causes aspiration, *e.g.* :

βan liom, a Seagáin. Wait for me, John.

Δia duit, a Seumas. Good morning, James.

**485.** When the Christian name is in the genitive case, it is aspirated, *e.g.* :

Leabhar Mairí. Mary's book.

Sgian Seoirse. George's knife.

**486.** Surnames when not preceded by a Christian name usually take the termination *ΔC*, which has the force of a patronymic (or father-name), and are declined like *maireac* (par. 57). They are usually preceded by the article except in the vocative case: *an Ógáinac*, Power; *capall an Óbrianaig*, O'Brien's horse

Two forms are admissible in the vocative case; facility of pronunciation is the best guide, e.g., *Seabhardha*, *Seabhardha*, *Seabhardha*. Come here, O'Brien. *A mic uisce*, *A mic uisce*, *A mic uisce*. O'Leary. *A mic uisce*, *A mic uisce*, *A mic uisce*. MacSweeney.

**487.** Surnames occurring in Ireland to-day are of three classes: (1) Surnames of Gaelic origin. These in almost every instance have the prefix *Ó* (*Ua*) or *Mac* for a male, and *ni* or *Nic* for a female. (2) Surnames of old foreign origin. The majority of these have no prefix. (3) Surnames of late foreign origin. Only a few of these have acquired a distinct form, pronounced in an Irish way.

**488.** When the surname is preceded by any of the words *Ó* (*Ua*), *Mac*, *ni*, *Nic*, the surname is in the genitive case, and is aspirated after *ni* or *Nic*, but not after *Ó* or *Mac*: e.g., *Seosamh mac Domhnaill*, John McDonnell; *Maire ni Conaill*, Mary O'Connell; *Dermot Ó Conaill*, Dermot O'Connell; *Nora Nic Domhnaill*, Nora McDonnell.

**489.** When the whole name is in the genitive case, the words after *ui* (gen. of *Ó* or *Ua*) and *mic* (gen. of *Mac*) are aspirated; *ni* and *Nic* do not change in genitive. *Leabhar Seumasair ui Ó Briain*, James O'Brien's book; *bó Ó Briain mic Domhnaill*, Brian McDonnell's cow.

**490.** *Mac* and *Ó* aspirate when they really mean "son" and "grandson" respectively.

mac Domhnaill, Donal's son.

mac Domhnaill, McDonnell.

Ó Briain, Brian's grandson.

Ó Briain, O'Brien.

491. Some surnames take the article after **mac** and **nic**—*e.g.*:

Seumas mac an Óir, James Ward.

Nóra Nic an Uictaig, Nora McNulty.

---

## CHAPTER III.

### The Adjective.

492. An adjective may be used either **predicatively** or **attributively**. An adjective is used *predicatively* when it is predicated of a noun by a verb, and in this case it is *usually* separated from the noun by the verb. “The way was *long*, the wind was *cold*.” “The day is *fine*.” “He made the mantles *green*.” “*Long*,” “*cold*,” “*fine*,” and “*green*” are used *predicatively*. An adjective is used *attributively* whenever it is not separated from the noun by the verb, and is not predicated of a noun by a verb: as, “The *infirm old* minstrel went wearily along.” “He made the *green* mantles.” The adjectives “*infirm*,” “*old*,” and “*green*” are here used *attributively*.

**493.** In Irish almost every common adjective can be used both predicatively and attributively. There are, however, one or two exceptions: *oīoc*, bad, and *deag*, good, can *never* be used predicatively. If "bad" or "good" be used predicatively in the English sentence, we must use *otc*, bad, or *maic*, good, in Irish. Never say or write *is deag é* for "he is good," but *is maic é*, &c.

The adjective *iomða* is always used predicatively with *is*. In Munster 'mō is used instead of *iomða*.

*Is iomða marcad do gáb an trúige seo.*

('Tis) many a rider (that) has gone this way.

## ADJECTIVE USED ATTRIBUTIVELY.

### (a) The Position of the Adjective.

**494.** As a general rule the adjective follows its noun in Irish: as, *teabhar mó*, a big book; *peair maic*, a good man.

**Exceptions.** (1) A numeral adjective, whether ordinal or cardinal, when it consists of one word, always precedes its noun: as *trí bá*, three cows; *óig círc*, two hens. The *interrogative*, *possessive*, and most of the *indefinite adjectives* also precede their noun.

(2) Monosyllabic adjectives are frequently placed before the noun, but then the noun and adjective form a compound noun, and consequently the initial of the noun is aspirated, when possible. This is

always the case with adjectives: *deag*, good; *mróic*, bad; *rean*, old; and frequently with *nuas*, new; and *rior*, true. In this position the form of the adjectives never changes for number or case, but it is subject to the very same initial changes as if it were a noun.

*rean-fear*, an old man; *rean-fír*, old men.

*trean-fear*, a brave man; *ártó-ri*, a high king.

*an trean-bean*, the old woman;

*lám an trean-fír*, the hand of the old man.

(3) When a name consists of two words the adjective frequently comes between them: as, "Sliab Gear Sí Cua," "the bright Slieve Gua."

#### (b) Agreement of the Adjective.

When an adjective is used attributively and follows its noun, it agrees with the noun in gender, number, and case: as, *bean móir*, a big woman; *mac an fír móir*, the son of the big man; *na fir móra*, the big men.

For the aspiration and eclipsis of the adjective see par. 149.

**495.** Since the adjective in English has no inflexion for gender, it is quite a common thing to have one adjective qualifying two or more nouns of different genders. Sometimes in Irish we meet with one adjective qualifying two nouns of different genders or numbers; in such cases the adjective follows the

latter noun, and agrees with it alone. However, the more usual method is to use the adjective after each noun: as,

Þearf manc aðsugr bean manc.  
A good man and woman.

## ADJECTIVE USED PREDICATIVELY.

### (a) Position of the Adjective.

**496.** An adjective used predicatively always follows its noun, except when it is predicated by means of the verb *is*, in any of its forms, expressed or understood.

The men are good, *Tā na fír manc.*

The day is fine, *Tā an lá bреág.*

If the verb *is* be used in these sentences, notice the position of the adjective and the use of the pronoun.

The men are good, *Ír manc na fír is.*

The day is fine, *Ír bреág an lá e.*

### (b) Agreement of the Adjective.

An adjective used predicatively never agrees with its noun in either gender, number, or case: in other words, *the simple form of the adjective is always used.*

Moreover, it is never aspirated nor eclipsed by the noun.

**497.** When the adjective comes immediately after the Past Tense or Conditional of *is* (i.e., *ba* or *buð*),

its initial is generally aspirated, when possible; but in this case it is not the noun which causes aspiration.

Úa uthaig an lá é. It was a fine day.

498. Notice the difference in meaning between the following:—

Rinne ré na rgeana gseupra	He made the sharp knives.
Rinne ré gseup na rgeana}	
Rinne ré na rgeana gseup}	He made the knives sharp.
Cá an bó móir tuib.	The big cow is black.
Cá an bó tuib móir.	The black cow is big.
Cá an oírdeá torcá fliuc.	The night is dark and wet.
Cá an oírdeá fliuc torcá.	The wet night is dark.

499. Adjectives denoting fulness or a part of anything are usually followed by *te* with the dative case:

full of milk, lán te bainne.

two barrels full of water, tó a báraite lán t' uisce.

## NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

### Position of the Words.

500. A numeral adjective, whether ordinal or cardinal, when it consists of one word, goes before the noun.

ceitíre capaill, four horses; ré caoimh, six sheep.

an ceathair bhuachaill, the first boy.

The words for 40, 60, 80, 200, 300, &c., also precede their nouns.

501. A numeral adjective, except those just mentioned, consisting of two or more words, takes its noun immediately after the first part of the numeral: as,

ceitíre capaill deaġ, fourteen horses.

óða uan deaġ, twelve lambs.

óða ᷑uin deaġ iñ tħri fiċċo, seventy-two cows.

502. When we wish to express large numbers in Irish, we may either place the unit digit first, then the tens, next the hundreds, and so on; or we may express them in the English order. Convenience for utterance and clearness of sense are the best guides in any particular case.

The word *agħus* is generally used with the larger numbers *céaġ*, *mile*, etc., and is with the smaller ones.

129 miles, *céaġ* (mile) *agħur* uaoi *mile* fiċċaġ.

79 horses, *uaoi* *għap-paill* *deag* iñ tħri fiċċo.

5,635 men, *cūiġ* *mile* *agħur* rē *céaġ* *feajr* *agħur* *cūiġ* rīħ *deag* *ap* fiċċo.

356 sheep, *rē* *caoiġiġ* *deag* iñ *óða* fiċċo *agħur* (*ap*) *tħri* *céaġ*.

1,666 years, *rē* *bil-awwa* iñ tħri fiċċo *agħur* (*ap*) *rē* *céaġ* *agħur* (*ap*) *mile*.

519 A.D., *aoiġ* *ta'* *n-tiġeġi* *cūiġ* *céaġ* *agħur* *uaoi* *deag*.

52,000 of the Roman army, *óða* *mile* *deag* iñ *ta'* fiċċo *mile* *dei* *fluagħ* *Romanu*.

More than 400 years, tuitte(əð) (bṛeif) agh  
ceitne céad bliadhain.

**About 80, tuaipim le (or timcheall le) ceitíre fíord.**

„ יְהִי „ „ יְהִי „ „

The word *rlige* is often added to make it clear that *miles* not *thousands* is meant. *Sé mile rlige, or ré mile [œ] rlige, six miles.*

503. The initials of the numerals undergo the very same changes with regard to aspiration and eclipsis as a noun would in the same position.

504. The article prefixes τ to *αοντας*, first, and to *οctητας*, eighth, whether the following noun be masculine or feminine: as,

an t-octmað bean, the eighth woman.

### Initial Changes produced by the Numerals.

505.  $\delta$ ον, one;  $\tau\alpha$ , two;  $\epsilon\epsilon\tau\sigma$ , first; and  $\tau\pi\epsilon\pi$ , third, aspirate the initial of the following word: as,

an **ú** **b** **a****m****a****i****n**; one cow; **a** **n** **c****e****u****o** **f****e****a****p**, the first man.

506. **Δον**, prefixes  $\tau$  to the letter  $\gamma$ ; but has no effect on  $\tau$  or  $\tau$ : **Δον** **αραλ** **αμάιν**, one ass; **Δον** **σορ** **αμάιν**, one foot; **Δον** **τραγαρτ** **αινάιν**, one priest; **Δον** **τριλατ** **αμάιν**, one rod; **Δον** **τρεαθαс** **αμάιν**, one hawk; **τά** **τρεαθαс**, two hawks; **Δον** **ταοв** **αμάιн**, one side.

507. *Sext*, *seven*; *oct*, *eight*; *nau*, *nine*; and *deci*, *ten*; and their compounds *eclipse* the initial

of the following noun and prefix *n* to vowels; react  
mba, seven cows; deic *n-ubla*, ten apples.

508. *Tri*, *ceitri*, *cúis* and *ré* have usually no effect on consonants (except *ceut*, 100, and *mite*, 1000); but *tri*, *ceitri*, *ré*, and *daera* prefix *n* to vowels: as, *tri* *ba*, three cows; *tri* *n-áras*, three asses; *ré* *n-ubla*, six apples; 'ran *daera* *n-dit*, in the second place; *tri* *ceut*, 300; *ceitri* *mite*, 4000.

*Tri*, *ceitri*, *cúis* and *ré* (as well as *react*, *oct*, &c.), cause **eclipsis** in the genitive plural: a *bean* *na* *tri* *mbó*. *O woman of three cows!* *lúac* *ceitri* *brúint* *four pound's worth*.

#### The Number of the Noun after the Numerals.

509. The noun after *aon* is always in the singular, even in such numbers as 11, 21, 31, 41, &c. The other numerals (except *da*) may take the singular number when unity of idea is expressed: e.g., *aon* *uball* *véas*, *eleven apples*; *deamhao* *ré* *an* *na* *tri* *buille* *'bualladh*. He forgot to strike the three blows.

510. When a noun has two forms in the plural, a short form and a long one, the short form is preferred after the numerals: as

*naoi* *n-uairfe*, nine times; not *naoi* *n-uairfeannu*.

511. In Modern Irish the numerals *fälle*, 20; *da* *fälle*, 40, &c., *ceut*, 100; *mite*, 1,000, are regarded as simple numeral adjectives which take the noun after them in the singular number.

512. This peculiar construction has arisen from the fact that these numerals are really *nouns*, and formerly governed the nouns after them in the *genitive plural*. As the genitive plural of most Irish nouns has exactly the same form as the nominative singular, the singular form has come to be almost universally used in Modern Irish after these numerals. Formerly they would use *ceuo* *ban* and *pe:ce* *caomha*, but now we use *ceuo* *bean* and *pe:ce* *caomha*.

513. The word *ceann* and its plural *cinn* are often used with numerals *when the noun is not expressed in English*: as, *Ca meuo* (an'mó) *teabhar agat?* *Tá* *ó* *ceann* *teuig* *agam*. How many books have you? I have twelve.

*Tá* *ceann* (or *duine*) *aca* *inf* *an* *tig*.

There is one of them in the house.

### The Dual Number.

514. *Óa*, "two," always takes the noun after it in the dual number (neither singular nor plural), which in every Irish noun has the same form as the dative singular. This does not at all imply that the noun after *óa* is in the dative case. It is in the *dative singular form*, but it may be in any of the five cases, according to its use in the sentence. All the cases of the dual number are alike, but the form of the genitive plural is often used for the genitive dual: *óa* *buin*, two cows; *óa* *gabhainn*, two smiths; *lán a óa* *lámh* or *lán a óa lámh*, the full of his two hands.

515. The article which qualifies a noun in the dual number will always be in the singular form.

516. The adjective which qualifies a noun in the dual number will be in the plural form, but really in the dual number; the pronouns belonging to the noun will be in the plural form; and the verb may, but need not be; because in these parts of speech the dual number and the plural number have the same forms.

517. The initial of an adjective\* qualifying and agreeing with a noun in the dual number will be aspirated, no matter what the gender or case of the noun may be: as,

ta tig deug, twelve houses.

an ta láimh bána, the two white hands.

táin a ta láimh beag, the full of her two little hands.

518. The *t* of *ta* is usually aspirated, except after words ending in *v*, *n*, *t*, *l*, *r* (dentals), or after the possessive adjective *a*, her.

a ta coir beaga, her two little feet.

---

\* Except demonstrative, possessive, indefinite, and interrogative adjectives.

### The Possessive Adjective:

519. A possessive adjective can never be used without a noun: as, her father and his, *ա հ-աւար աշուր աւար*.

520. The possessive adjectives always precede their nouns: as, *մատար*, my mother.

521. The possessives *mo*, my; *to*, thy; and *ա*, his, aspirate the initial of their nouns; *ար*, our; *օսր*, your; and *և*, their, cause eclipsis: as, *ա տան*, his poem; *տո մատար*, thy mother; *և տան*, her poem; *և ուտան*, their poem.

522. If a noun begins with a vowel, *mo*, my, and *to*, thy, become *m'* and *t'* (*t* or *t*); *ա*, his, has no effect; *ա*, her, prefixes *h*; and *և*, their, prefixes *n*; *ար*, our, and *օսր*, your, also prefix *n* to vowels: as, *ա աւար*, his father; *ա հ-աւար*, her father; *ա ն-աւար*, their father; *մ'քար*, my husband; *օ'ւն*, your bird; *ար ն-արան լաւեամալ*, our daily bread; *օսր ն-օսրան*, your song.

523. The possessive adjectives, when compounded with prepositions (see par. 186), have the same influence over the initials of their nouns as they have in their uncompounded state: as, *տօմ մատար*, to my mother; *օմ տիր*, from my country.

524. When the portion of a thing which belongs to one or more persons is to be expressed by the possessive adjectives, the name of the thing is preceded by *cúir*, with the possessive adjective before it. The name of the thing is in the genitive case—genitive singular if *quantity* be implied, but genitive plural if *number*—as, my bread, *mo cùir aghain* (lit. my share of bread); his wine, *a cùir fionn*; their horses, *a gcuir capall*.

This rule is not always followed; for instance, we sometimes find *m'fion*, my wine; but *mo cùir fionsa* is more idiomatic.

525. The word *cúir* is never used in this way before the name of a single object.

*mo leabhar*, my book; *a gcapall*, their horse.

*a leabhar*, his book; but *a cùir leabhar*, his books.

*a bò*, her cow; *a cùir bò*, her cows.

526. The word *cúir* is not used in such phrases as *mo corp*, my feet; *mo fùile*, my eyes; *a cnámha*, his bones, &c.

527. When the emphatic suffix is used, some make it follow *cúir*; others make it follow the noun: as, *mo cùir-re aghain* or *mo cùir aghain-re*.

## CHAPTER IV.

## THE PRONOUN.

## Personal Pronoun.

528. The personal pronouns agree with the nouns for which they stand in gender, number and person: as, He is a big man. *Is mór an fear é.* They are big men. *Is mór na fir iad.*

529. A personal pronoun which stands for a noun the gender of which is different from its sex, agrees in gender with the sex of the noun; as, *Is maith an caillín i.* She is a good girl. *Is ollc an comhúlla é.* He is a bad neighbour.

530. In Irish we have no neuter pronoun corresponding to the English "it;" hence, in translating "it," we must determine the gender of the Irish noun (masculine or feminine) and then use *ré* (he) or *ri* (she) accordingly: \* as, It is terrible weather. *Is caillte an aimsir i.* Is to-day Friday? *An i an Aoine atá agamh?* Dob i an fírinne i. It was the truth. *Tá an carún agam, ní fuisil ré taim.* I have the hammer, it is not heavy.

\* The word *áit* although feminine takes sometimes a masculine pronoun, as, *Is near an áit é.* It is a nice place.

Notice also—

*Is é* }  
or }  
*Is i* } *mo bhearráis, mo éasáin, &c. It is my opinion, &c., &c.*

531. The pronoun *tú*, thou, is always used to translate the English “you” when only one person is referred to; as, How are you? *Cionnair tá tú?* What a man you are! *Náct tú an fear!*

532. The personal pronouns, whether nominative or accusative, always come after the verb; as, *molann ré tú*, he praises you.

533. The disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are used immediately after the verb *1S* in any of its forms expressed or understood; as, *ír é an fear láorí é*. He is a strong man. *An é a fuair é?* Was it he who found it? *Náct i o' ingean i?* Is she not your daughter?

534. A personal pronoun which stands for a sentence, or part of a sentence, is third person singular, masculine gender. *An rato aonadhairt mé, ír é a deirim ari.* What I said, I repeat.

535. The accusative personal pronoun usually comes last in the sentence or clause to which it belongs: as, *O'fág ré ari an áit rím iad*. He left them at that place. *Rugré leir mile eile é*. He brought it with him another mile. *O'fágair im óláir é*. I left it after me.

#### Relative Pronoun.

536. The relative particle follows its antecedent and precedes its verb: as, *an fear a chonaic*, the man who will sleep.

**537.** The relative particle, whether expressed or understood, always causes aspiration: as, *an peap  
bear aS obair*, the man who will be at work.

**538.** The relative when preceded by a preposition causes eclipsis (unless the verb be in the Past Tense). When the relative *a* signifies "all that" or "what" it causes eclipsis: as, *an ait i n-a b-put ré*, the place in which he is; *a bput i mbaoile-áta-cliat*, all that is in Dublin.

**539.** When the relative is governed by a preposition and followed by a verb in the Past Tense, the relative combines with *no* (the old sign of the Past Tense), and does not eclipse: *an ait a n-tuit aob*, the place where (in which) Hugh fell.

**540.** The eight verbs which do not admit of the compounds of *no* being used before them (see par. 279) form an exception to the last rule: as, *an tip i n-a dtáinig ré*, the country into which he came.

**541.** In English, when the relative or interrogative pronoun is governed by a preposition, the pronoun very often comes before the governing word: as, *What are you speaking about? The man that he gave the book to is here.* In colloquial Irish it is a very common practice to separate the relative particle from the preposition which governs it; but instead of using a simple preposition at the end of the sentence, as in English, we use a **prepositional pronoun**. Thus we

can say—*an fear aig a bhuil an bò*, or more usually, *an fear a bhuil an bò aige*,\* the man who has the cow; *an fear ari òiolar an capall leir*, or *an fear leir òiolar an capall*, the man to whom I sold the horse.

**542.** The forms *taim* or *taimad*, *taimh*, *teimh*, *timh*, &c., are compounds of a preposition, relative particle; “*mo*,” the sign of the Past Tense; and *ba* or *bu* the Past Tense of *ir*.

*taimh*=*to + a + mo + ba*=to whom was.

*teimh*=*te + a + mo + ba*=with or by whom was.

as, *bean taimh ainnm Brigid*, a woman whose name was Brigid.

**543.** As the accusative case of the relative particle has exactly the same form as the nominative, the context must determine, in those tenses in which the verb has no distinct termination for the relative, whether the relative particle is the subject or object of the verb; *an fear a buail Seagán*, may mean, The man whom John struck, or The man who struck John.

#### Translation of the Genitive Case of the English Relative.

**544.** The Irish relative has no inflection for case; hence, in order to translate the English word “whose”

\* *An fear go bhuil an bò aige* is also used.

when not an interrogative, we must use one of the prepositions (*as*, *to*, *i*) + relative particle + possessive adjective (before the noun).

The man whose son was sick.

an fear  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{a} \\ \text{as} \\ \text{i n-a} \end{array} \right\}$  náib a mac tinn.

but *a*, *as*, or *i n-a* are often shortened to *o*, *so*, and *'na*; hence the above sentence in colloquial Irish would be—

an fear  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{o} \\ \text{so} \\ \text{'na} \end{array} \right\}$  náib a mac tinn.

The woman whose son is sick visited us yesterday.

an bean *úr*  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{so} \\ \text{'sá} \\ \text{&c.} \end{array} \right\}$  ófuit a mac tinn táinig ri  
an chuaill intó eugáinn.

**545.** To translate the English relative pronoun when governed by an active participle, we employ a somewhat similar construction; as—

The hare that the hounds are pursuing.

an ghráfraíodh *so* ófuit na gaothair aír a tóir (or aír a tóir, or *as* tóirteagácht aír).

The man whom I am striking.

an fear atá *asam* 'a (o'á, sá) óuallao.

**546.** The relative *a* meaning *all that, what*, may itself be genitive; as, *trían a náibh ann*, a third of what were there. “*Beir beannaithe óm ériuibh cùm a mairéann ari báinéchoic Éireann óig.*” “Bear a blessing from my heart to all those who live on the fair hills of Holy Ireland.”

The relative *a* in this sentence is genitive case being governed by *cum* (see par. 603).

---

## CHAPTER V.

---

### The Verb.

**547.** As a general rule the verb precedes its nominative: as, *tá ré*, he is; *tí an peapá ann*, the man was there.

**Exceptions.** (1) When the subject is a relative or an interrogative pronoun the verb comes after its subject; as,

*An buaileann a buailearf mé.* The boy who strikes me.

*Cao atá agat?* What have you?

(2) In a relative sentence the nominative though not a relative pronoun may precede its verb; but as the noun is usually far separated from the verb, a

personal pronoun is used as a sort of temporary subject, so that really the noun and its pronoun are nominative to the same verb: as,

An fear atá 'na fíearamh ag an tóirír buail ré an capall. The man who is standing at the door struck the horse.

Compare the similar use of the French pronoun *ce*; or the English "He that shall persevere unto the end, *he* shall be saved."

(3) The nominative often precedes its verb in poetry, and sometimes even in prose.

Rat go raibh aon! Success to you!

**548. Transitive verbs govern the accusative case;** and the usual order of words is, Verb, Subject, Object. When the subject or object is a relative or an interrogative pronoun it precedes the verb.

Do minne Seághán an bád fáin. John made that boat.

Do buail an buachaill é. The boy struck him.

For the conditions under which a verb is aspirated or eclipsed, see pars. 21(g) and 26(e).

### Use of the Subjunctive Mood.

**549. The most frequent use of the present subjunctive is with the conjunction *GO*, expressing a wish. If the wish be negative use *NÁR* (except with *raibh*).**

Go mbeannuisgo Dia duit !	May God bless you !
Go bróiriú Dia orainn !	God help us !
Go dtéig tū ríán !	Safe home ! (may you go safely) !
Náir leisgo Dia rin !	May God not allow that ! God forbid !
Go rai'b mait agat !	Thank you !
Ná rai'b mait agat !	No thanks to you !

550. The subjunctive is also used after *nó* *GO*, *GO* or *ACCT GO*, all meaning "until"; and after *muna*, "unless," but only when there is an element of doubt.

Fan annro go dtagao ariar.	Stay here till I come again.
Muna gceireoirí ríb mé.	Unless you believe me.
Muna dtugaidh tū an t-airgeadó dom.	Unless you give me the money.

551. *Sul a*, *sul fa*, *sul mā*, *sul Dā*, all meaning "before," when used with reference to an event not considered as an actual occurrence, take the subjunctive; as,

Imteig leat rul a dtagair an maigirtí. Be off with you, before the master comes.

552. The past subjunctive is found after *Dā* or *muna* to express a supposed condition. They may also take a conditional. In translating the English phrases "if he believed," "if he had believed" (im-

plying that he did not believe), we use *óð* with the past subjunctive; but as this Tense is identical in form with the Imperfect Tense, it may be said that it is the Imperfect Tense which is employed in this case.

If you were to see Donal on the following day  
you would pity him.

*Óð Өfeicteð Tómnall ap mairtin lð ap n-a Өðras  
bað tðmuas leat e.*

If you were to give me that book.

*Óð Өtugtá-ja Өomra an leabhar rím.*

If it were true for him. *Óð mbað fíor óð e.*

All the particles given above can also be used with the past subjunctive in reference to past time.

**553.** In the passive voice the present and past subjunctive are identical in form with the Present and Imperfect Tenses (respectively) of the Indicative Mood.

May it be worn out well. *Go Өcaitteap go mait e.*

May it never be worn out. *Náp Өcaitteap go veo e.*

If it were worn out. *Óð Өcaitti e.*

### Relative Form of the Verb.

**554.** The relative form of the verb is used after the relative particle *ð*, *when it is the subject of the verb*; (but never after the negative relative *nac*, *which* or *who...not*). It has a distinct form in two, and only

two, Tenses—the *Present* and the *Future*. In these two Tenses it ends in *ar* or *ear*. In all the other Tenses the third person singular is used after the relative pronoun. The verb is aspirated after the relative, expressed or understood ; but *nac* eclipses.

**555.** The inflection of the relative form in *present* tense is not used in the spoken Language of to-day (except in proverbs). In Connaught the final *r* of the relative form is added to the form for the 3rd person singular ; *e.g.*, *an fear* a *buaireannr*, *the man who strikes* ; *an buaċail* a *tuigeanrr*, *the boy who understands*. The literary form of the relative in the *future* tense is retained in full vigour in Connaught ; *e.g.*, *an fear* a *buasirfear*, *the man who will strike*. In Munster the relative form has entirely disappeared in both the present and the future tenses (except in proverbs). The 3rd person singular form has taken its place ; *e.g.*, *an fear* a *buaireann*, *the man who strikes*.

**556.** As the relative has no inflection for case, ambiguity sometimes arises : *e.g.*, *an fear* a *buail* *Seagán*, may mean, either *the man who struck John*, or, *the man whom John struck*. The context usually solves the difficulty. The following construction is sometimes employed in order to obviate any ambiguity :—

*An fear* a *buail* *Seagán*. The man who struck John.  
*An fear* *sun* *buail* *Seagán* The man whom John  
*é*. struck.

**557.** *Cionnur*, how; *nuaip*, when; and *maip*, as, are followed by the relative form of the verb in the Present and Future, and the verb is aspirated ; but with *cionnur* a, *cia an cāoi*, *cia an nōr*, *cia an moō*, or any

other such locutions, the eclipsing *a* or *i* (*in which*) is used before the verb. Before the Past Tense, of course, *an* (*a+no*) is used. *Cionnur a bfuil tú?* How are you?

*Maŋ* is also followed by the ordinary Present and Future.

**558. *Sul*, "before," has two usages.** It may be followed by the relative forms—*e.g.*, *put tioçfar ré*, *put tainig ré*; or else it may be followed by one of the particles *a*, *ma*, *pa*, *ta*, all of which eclipse.

**559.** After these particles, the Subjunctive Mood is often used when the event is future and uncertain, or contains a mental element: as—

*Imtig leat put a bfeicid ré tú.*

Be off (with you) before he sees you (*i.e.*, so that he may not see you).

It is not correct to eclipse after the word *put*, as *put tainig*, although sometimes done.

**560.** The relative form of the Present Tense is frequently used as a historic present, even when no relative occurs in the sentence: as—

*Noctar Eremón doib.* Eremon revealed to them.

### The Verbal Noun and its Functions.

561. "Is there an Infinitive in Irish?" We give here Father O'Leary's answer to his own question, "Certainly not." In Irish there is neither an infinitive mood nor a present participle, both functions being discharged by the verbal noun. It follows from this statement that *there is no such thing as a sign of the infinitive mood in Irish.*

Ír mairt liom riubal.	I wish to walk.
Dubhar leir gán teacht.	I told him not* to come.
Tá oíchea feiceamh.	I have to wait.
Níor mairt liom bean-nuigadó vó.	I did not wish to salute him.
Ni thíos le mala polam.	An empty bag cannot stand.

562. In the above examples, and in thousands of similar ones, the *Irish verbal noun is an exact equivalent in sense of the English infinitive, sign and all.* If any one of the prepositions *do* (or *a*), *te* or *cum*, be used before the verbal nouns in the above examples, the result is utter nonsense. Now consider the following examples:—

Ír mairt liom an bóthar do	I wish to walk the road.
riubal.	
Ír mairt liom focal do	I wish to speak a word.
labhairt.	

\* Not before the English infinitive is translated by *gán* (a prep., without).

Óubairt m'atair liom san My father told me not to  
 an capall do óiol. sell the horse.

Ír cónaí óuit an feúin do You ought to cut the grass.  
 baint.

An férfeadh leat an caint Can you understand the  
 do cuisgrint? conversation?

Ír mian liom litir do I wish to write a letter.  
 ríomhád.

563. The *preposition* *do* in the above examples and ones like them between the noun and the verbal noun, is very often, in the spoken language, softened to *a*: and this *a* is not heard before or after a vowel: as,

Ír cónaí óuit comáistíte 'glacád.

You ought to take advice.

564. In any sentence of the first set of examples there is question of only one thing; *e.g.*, riubal, teact, feiteam, &c., but in each of the sentences of the second set *there is a relation between two things*: *e.g.*, bótar and riubal, focal and labairt, &c., and to express this relationship a *preposition* is used between the two nouns. If the relation between the nouns be altered the preposition must also be altered, as—

Tá bótar agam le riubal, I have a road to walk.

Tá focal agam le labairt, I have a word to say.

Tá capall agam le óiol, I have a horse for sale (to sell).

Tá feúin agat le baint, You have grass to cut.

565. There is still another preposition which can be used between the nouns to express another alteration in meaning—

Tá teac cum comnuigte I have a house to live in.  
aigam.

Tá capall cum marcuig- He has a horse to ride on.  
eacta aige.

If in any one of these sentences the wrong preposition be employed the proper meaning cannot be expressed.

566. In translating the simple English infinitive of an intransitive verb, use the simple verbal noun in Irish: as,

He told me to go to Cork.      Dúbairt ré liom dul go  
Corkais.

An empty bag cannot stand.      Ní tig le mala folam  
reasam.

It is impossible to write without learning.      Ní féidir ríomhádó gan  
foglaim.

I prefer to walk.      Is feappi liom riubal.

He cannot stand.      Ní tig leis reasam.

Tell him to sit down.      Aduair leis rurde riord.

Tell them to go away.      Aduair leo imteast.

567. When the English intransitive infinitive expresses purpose (i.e., the gerundial infinitive), use the preposition *to*.

He came to stay,      Táinig sé le fanaíant.

I have a word to say, Tá focal agam le labhairt.

You are to wait, Tá tú te peiteam.

I am to go, Táim le dul.

568. When the English verb is transitive and in the simple infinitive (no purpose implied) use the preposition *to* or the softened form *a*.

My father told me to buy a horse. Dubaip m'ataip liom capall do ceannach.

You ought to have cut the grass. *Ba chóir duit an feirg do baint.*

He told me not to shut *Tuðaist ré liom gan an*  
the door. *donar do túnað.*

Would you like to read *An tsean teat an leabhar* this book? *ro ro leiseas?*

569. When the English infinitive is transitive, and also expresses purpose, use either *CUN* or *LE* before the noun which is the object of the English infinitive, and *OO* before the verbal noun in Irish; *cun* takes

the noun after it in the genitive; *te* becomes *teir* before the article, and then causes eclipsis if the noun be singular.

He will come to judge the living and the dead. *Tiocfaidh Sé cum bhréiteannair do chathairt agus do mharbait.*

He came to buy a horse. *Táinig ré te capall do ceannas.*

He went to strike the men. *Cuairdh ré cun na bhréar do bhualaodh.*

He went to strike the man. *Cuairdh ré leir an bhréar do bhualaodh.*

He said that to praise the girl. *Oibhleaptear ré rím leir an scailín do moladh.*

He came to buy the horse. *Táinig ré cum an capaill a ceannas.*

**570.** We can also express the above by means of the preposition *do* alone, but in this case we must put the verbal noun before the other noun. This latter will, of course, be now in the genitive case, because one noun governs another in the genitive case. This is the *only governing power the verbal noun has in Irish.*

He came to buy the horse. *Táinig ré do ceannas an capaill.*

He went to strike the man. *Cuairdhe ré do bhualaodh an fír.*

Did you come to strike An t-áinsair do bhuailadh  
John? Seagáin?

He came to make fun. Táinig ré do Óeunáin  
funn.

They came to make war. Τάνγαναρ δο θευνατί<sup>η</sup>  
σοςαιò.

N.B.—This latter method is not often used in the spoken language.

571. When the English infinitive is passive, and also expresses purpose, use *te*.

He is to be hanged. Тя је те споља, or те  
бешт споља.

The milk is to be drunk. Tá an bainne le h-ol (&c.).

Cows are to be bought at Tá ba te ceannac an aonac.  
the fair.

The grass is to be cut. T& an peup te baint.

The house is to be sold. Tá an teac le viol.

There is no one to be seen  
on the road. Ni fuit duine ari bhit le  
feicint ari an mbóthair.

572. When a personal pronoun is the object of the English infinitive and the latter does not express purpose, we translate as follows:—

You ought not to strike me. { Ni cōipi ūuit mē do ūualād.  
{ Ni cōipi ūuit mo ūualād.

I wished to strike him. { Ba mian liom é do bualat.  
{ Ba mian liom a bualat.

I wish to praise her.	{ Ir miān liom i do molad. Ir miān liom a molad.
It is not right to strike them.	{ Ni cōip iad do bualað. Ni cōip a mbualað.
It is a bad thing to wound me.	{ Ir ocl an ruð me do gonað. Ir ocl an ruð mo gonað.
I cannot understand it.	Ni tig liom a tuisprint (its understanding).
Could you tell me who it was?	An péiríp leat a* innprint oðom cia 'þb'é?
A desire to kill them came upon me.	Táinig miān a mærða oðimra.
In this sentence mærða is the genitive case (after the noun miān) of the verbal noun mærða.	

573. When the English infinitive governing a personal pronoun expresses purpose, we translate as follows:—

He came to strike me.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Táinig ré voom bualaod.} \\ \text{Táinig ré le mé voo bualaod.} \end{array} \right.$
I went to strike them.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Cuarod mé v'á m'bualaod.} \\ \text{Cuarod mé le h-iau vo bualaod.} \end{array} \right.$

\* Whenever the object of the verbal noun is a phrase, it cannot be put in the genitive case, but the possessive adjective *a* is used before the verbal noun.

They are coming to wound  
us.

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Tá ríao ag teacht dár} \\ \text{ngonad.} \end{array} \right.$   
 $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Tá ríao ag teacht le rinn} \\ \text{do gónad.} \end{array} \right.$

If we used the autonomous form in this last sentence we would get—

They are coming to wound  
us.

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Tátar ag teacht dár} \\ \text{ngonad.} \end{array} \right.$   
 $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Tátar ag teacht le rinn} \\ \text{do gónad.} \end{array} \right.$

**574.** The English present participle is usually translated by the verbal noun preceded by the preposition *ag*. If the English present participle expresses "rest" (e.g., *standing*, *sitting*, *lying*, *sleeping*, &c.), the verbal noun must be preceded by the preposition *i* (= *in*) compounded with a suitable possessive adjective (§ 186).

Tá ríao ag teacht. They are coming.

Ói an buachaill 'na ríearam. The boy was standing.

Tá an bhean 'na ríearam. The woman is standing.

**575.** The verbal noun in each of the above is dative case, governed by the preposition *ag*.

**576.** When the English present participle governs an objective case, the object if a noun will follow the verbal noun in Irish and will be in the genitive case.

He is cutting the grass. Tá ré ag baint an féir.

She was stretching out her hand. Ói ri ag fineadh a láimhe amach.

Are you reading the letter? **Ófuit tú aS leigearó ná  
litripe?**

Who was beating the child? **Cia bí aS bualaó an leinb?**

**577. If the object of the English present participle be a personal pronoun we cannot translate as in the above sentences, because the pronouns have no genitive case; hence instead of using the personal pronouns we must employ the possessive adjectives. Possessive adjectives must always precede the nouns which they qualify.**

He is striking me. **Tá ré 'sám (or aSOM)  
bualaó (lit. he is at my  
beating).**

Are you breaking it? **Ófuit tú 'sá (aSÁ)  
briareao?**

Are you breaking them? **Ófuit tú 'sá (aSÁ) mbriar-  
eaó?**

He is praising us. **Tá ré sám (aS ÁM) molao.**

Is he not burning them? **NáC ófuit ré 'sá (aSÁ)  
núósáó?**

They are not striking her. **Ní fuit riao 'sá (aSÁ)  
bualaó.**

Note carefully the initial effects of the possessive adjectives on the verbal nouns after them.

578. Preceded by *an*, the Verbal Noun has the force of a Present Participle Passive, denoting a continued or habitual state: as,

Ni fuil an teanga rín *an* That language is not  
laethairt aonair. spoken now.

Tá an ériuít *an* eproclad *an* The harp is hanging on  
an uisce. the bough.

Sgeul *an* leanamaint. A continued story.  
In this idiom *an* neither aspirates nor eclipses.

579. With *an*, *after* (eclipsing), the Verbal Noun has the force of a Perfect Participle: as,

Íar uisceáct i n-Éirinn do pháirais,  
Patrick having come into Ireland.

But in this idiom *an* is usually shortened to *a*: as, *a* *isceáct*, &c., the eclipse being retained. In colloquial language the Verbal Noun is commonly aspirated, not eclipsed, by *an* in this usage.

580. *Gan* is the word used to express negation with the Verbal Noun: as, *gan teacáit*, not to come.

Abaír le Brian *gan* an gort do tmeabád.  
Tell Brian not to plough the field.

581. *Gan* with the Verbal Noun has the force of the Passive Participle in English with *un* prefixed: as,

Mo chúis púint olna agur *an* *gan* rniomh,  
My five pounds of wool, and they *unspun*.

582. The genitive of the Verbal Noun is often used where a relative or infinitive clause would be used in English: as,

Úisír fágádó fear inniúrté rgeáil,

There was not a man left *to tell the tidings*.

Cailín dearf cíúróitc na mbó,

The pretty girl *who milks* the cows (lit. of the milking, &c.).

583. The following examples will be studied with advantage. They are culled from Father O'Leary's *Mion-cáint* :—

Someone is striking me. Tátar 'sám bualadó.

I am being struck. Táim vom bualadó.

Someone is striking the dog. Tátar ag bualadó an gádair.

The dog is being struck. Tá an gádair vom bualadó.

Someone is breaking the stones. Tátar ag bhríeadó na scloic.

The stones are being broken. Tá na scloic vom bhríeadó.

They used to kill people. Óiti ag marbád óaoine.

People used to be killed. Óisír óaoine vom marbád.

They used to buy horses. Óiti ag ceannád capall.

Horses used to be bought. Óisír capall vom gceannád.

We (or they) will be digging potatoes.	Úeáitfeap ag baint pílátáoi.
Potatoes will be dug.	Úeáit pílátáoi tá mbaint.
We shall have dug the potatoes.	Úeáit na pílátáoi bainte againn.
If they were breaking stones, they would not be cold.	Óá mbéáití ag bhríseadó cloc ní úeáití fuaí.
If they are breaking stones they are not cold.	Má tátáí ag bhríseadó cloc ní fuitceap fuaí.

### THE VERB 1S.

584. A definite noun is one limited by its nature or by some accompanying word to a definite individual or group.

The following are definite nouns:—

- (a) The name of a person or place (but not a class name like Sápanac).
- (b) A noun preceded by the definite article.
- (c) A noun preceded by a demonstrative adjective.
- (d) A noun preceded by gac (because it means each taken individually).
- (e) A noun followed by any other definite noun in the genitive case.

Any noun not included in the above classes is an indefinite noun.

585. Whenever a definite noun is the subject of a verb in English, and the verb *is* is employed in translating into Irish, a personal pronoun must immediately precede the definite noun in Irish.

John is the man. *Is é Seán an peap*

### WHEN TO USE THE VERB *is*.

586. (a) When the verb "to be" in English is followed by a definite noun, use *is*: as,

I am John.	<i>Is mise Seán.</i>
It is the man.	<i>Is é an peap é.</i>
You are my brother.	<i>Is tú mo Óeallbhriáchtair.</i>
James is the man.	<i>Is é Seumair an peap.</i>
It is the woman of the house.	<i>Is í bean an tigé i.</i>
Are you not my friend?	<i>Náct tú mo cárta?</i>
He is not my father.	<i>Ní h-é rím m'atáir.</i>

All sentences of this class are called "Identification sentences."

He, she and they in sentences of identity have usually the force of demonstrative pronouns, and are translated by *é* *rím*, *í* *rím*, *is* *rím*.

(b) When the verb "to be" in English is followed by an indefinite noun *is* or *tá* may be used, but with very different meanings. Whenever we use the verb *is* in such a sentence we convey the idea of "classification," or *species*: as, *Is*

annúigé *do*. A cow is an animal, &c.; or we *lay stress on what the person or thing is at the time being*, without any thought that he has become what he, or it, is. For instance, a father, enumerating to a friend the various positions in life of his children, may say, *Ir ceannúidé Seumair, ir ragsairt Seasán, agus ir fear tuisge Micheál*: James is a merchant, John a priest, and Michael is a lawyer. He should not use *tá* in such a case, as he considers simply what each is at the time being. When *tá* is used we convey the idea that the person or thing *has become* what he (or it) is, *and that he (or it) was not always so*. Suppose a father is telling what professions his sons have adopted, he should say, *tá Seumair 'na ceannúidé*, &c. In such constructions the verb *tá* must be followed by the preposition *i* or *a*, and a suitable possessive adjective.

(c) The difference between *tá* and *ir* is well exemplified by the two sentences *ir fear é* and *tá ré 'na fear*, both meaning “He is a man.” If we see a figure approach us in the dark, and after looking closely at it we discover it to be a man, our correct phraseology would then be, *ir fear é*. But when we say *tá ré 'na fear* we convey a very different idea. We mean that the person of whom we are speaking is no longer a boy, he has now reached manhood. If anyone were speaking to you of a person as if he were a mere boy, and you wished to correct him, you should use the phrase *tá ré 'na fear*.

(d) When the indefinite noun after the verb "to be" in English is qualified by an adjective, the verb *is* or *tá* may be used according to the idea we wish to convey. If we wish to express a "condition sentence" (i.e., one which has reference to the state or condition of the subject at the time in question), we use *tá*; otherwise we employ *is*, e.g.,

He is a small man.      Tá ré 'na fíor beag.

He is a useful man.      Tá ré 'na fíor fóghanta.

She was a good woman      Ói ri 'na mnáoi mhaic.

(e) When the verb *is* is employed in such sentences *there is a choice of two constructions*. In the second construction (as given in the examples below), we emphasise the adjective, by making it the prominent idea of the sentence. The definite article must be used in the second construction.

*Is lá bheag é.*      *Is bheag an lá é.*      } It is a fine day.

*Is oróige fuaig i.*      *Is fuaig an oróige i.*      } It is a cold night.

*Is bó bheag i rin.*      *Is bheag an bó i rin.*      } That is a fine cow.

*Nácl oileán dear é rin?*      *Nácl dear an t-oileán é rin?*      } Isn't that a pretty island?

(f) When a simple adjective follows the verb "to be" in English, either *is* or *tá* may be employed in translating, as,

Honey is sweet, *is* *milír* *mil* or *tá* *mil* *milír*.

He is strong, *is* *láidir* *é* or *tá* *ré* *láidir*.

587. The beginning of a sentence is naturally the place of greatest prominence, and is usually occupied in Irish by the verb. When, however, any idea other than that contained in the verb is to be emphasised, it is placed immediately after the verb *is*, and the rest of the sentence is thrown into the relative form.

For example, "We went to Derry yesterday," would be generally translated: *Cuairí rinn go Óiríe inoé*: but it may also take the following forms according to the word emphasised.

We went to Derry yesterday. *Is* *rinnne* *do* *cuairí* *go*  
day. *Óiríe* *inoé*.

We went to *Derry* yesterday. *Is* *go* *Óiríe* *do* *cuairí*  
day. *rinn* *inoé*.

We went to Derry *yesterday*. *Is* *inoé* *do* *cuairí* *rinn* *go*  
day. *Óiríe*.

### 588. The Verb *is* is then used.

- (1) To express Identity, e.g., *Is* *é* *Conn* *an* *pí*.
- (2) " Classification, " *Is* *pí* *Conn*.
- (3) " Emphasis, " *Is* *inoé* *do* *cuairí*  
*rinn* *go* *Óiríe*.

## POSITION OF WORDS WITH IS.

589. The predicate of the sentence always follows 1s: as,

Dermot is a man,	1f fearl Óileannair.
They are children,	1f páirpoi iad.
John is a priest,	1f ragart Seán.
Coal is black,	1f tuib gual.
A cow is an animal,	1f ainmige bó.
Turf is not coal,	Ní gual móin.
Is it a man?	An fear e?

590. Sentences of Identification—e.g., *Conn is the king*—form an apparent exception. The fact is that in this sentence either the word “Conn” or “the king” may be the *logical predicate*. In English “king” is the *grammatical predicate*, but in Irish it is the *grammatical subject*, and “Conn” is the *grammatical predicate*. Hence the sentence will be, 1f e Conn an rí.

591. In such sentences, when two nouns or a pronoun and noun are connected by the verb 1f, as a general rule, the more particular and individual of the two is made grammatical predicate in Irish. *The converse usually holds in English.* For instance, we say in English “I am the messenger,” but in Irish 1f mire an teacstaire (lit. “the messenger is I”). Likewise with the following:—

You are the man,	1f tú an fear.
He is the master,	1f é rím an maistir.
We are the boys,	1f rinnne na buachailli.

592. Sentences like "It is Donal," "It is the messenger," &c., are translated *ír é Domhnall é*, *ír é an teacstaíne é*. Here "é Domhnall" and "é an teacstaíne" are the grammatical predicates, and the second é in each case is the subject.

It is the master,      *ír é an maigírtíp é.*

He is the master,      *ír é rin an maigírtíp.*

(The underlined words are the predicates.)

593. In recent times we often find such sentences as "ír é an maigírtíp," "ír é an peap," &c., for "It is the master," "It is the man," in which the last é, the subject of the sentence, is omitted.

#### Translation of the English Secondary Tenses.

594. The English Present Perfect Tense is translated by means of the Present Tense of the verb *tá*, followed by *o' éir* (or *tá* *éir*) and the verbal noun. When *o' éir* comes immediately before the verbal noun, the latter will be in the genitive case; but when *o' éir* is separated from the verbal noun by the object of the English verb, the verbal noun will be preceded by the preposition *oo*, and will be dative case.

He wrote,      *Do rípiobh ré.*

He has just written,      *Tá ré *o' éir* rípiobhá.*

He broke the window,      *Do ńpír ré an fúinneog.*

He has broken the window,      *Tá ré *o' éir* na fúinneoige  
oo ńpíreao.*

He has just died,      *Tá ré *o' éir* ńair *o' fásgáil.**

595. The word “*just*” in these sentences is not translated into Irish, and the word after *o' éir* is in the genitive case.

596. When the English verb is transitive there is another very neat method of translating the secondary tenses. As already stated, there is no verb “*to have*” in Irish: its place is supplied by the verb *TÁ* and the preposition *AG*. Thus, “*I have a book*” is, *TÁ leabhar agam*. A similar construction may be used in translating the secondary tenses of an English transitive verb. The following sentences will illustrate the construction:—

I have written the letter,	<i>TÁ an litir fsgniochtá agam.</i>
I have struck him,	<i>TÁ ré buailte agam.</i>
Have you done it yet?	<i>Úfuit ré veunta agat fór?</i>
I have broken the stick,	<i>TÁ an mairé bhrigte agam.</i>

597. The English Pluperfect and Future Perfect are translated in the same manner as the Present Perfect, except that the Past and Future Tenses respectively of *TÁ* must be used instead of the Present, as above. The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

He died,	<i>fuair ré bár.</i>
He had just died,	<i>Bi ré o' éir báir o' fágáil.</i>
He had broken the chair,	<div style="display: flex; align-items: center; justify-content: space-between;"> <div style="flex-grow: 1; text-align: right;"> <i>Bi ré o' éir na cátáoiríeadc</i>  <i>    to bhríeadó.</i> </div> <div style="margin-right: 20px;"> <i>Bi an cátáoirí bhríte aige.</i> </div> </div>

The window has just been broken by a stone,	{ Táctar v' éir na fúinneoire do bhríeadh le cloic.
I had written the letter,	{ Óid an litir ríomhda agam. Óid v' éir na litrié do ríomhdaú.
I shall have finished my work before you will be ready,	{ Déadó v' éir círe do chur ar mo chuid oibre rul a mbéir péród (uillamh), Déiridh mo chuid oibre círeac- nusigthe agam rul a mbéir péród.

### Prepositions after Verbs.

598. We give here a few verbs which require a preposition after them in Irish, although they require none in English:—

Séillim do,	I obey.
Umhluigim do,	„
Curuisim te,	I assist.
Innrírim do,	
Deirírim te,	I tell.
Tugaim ar,	I persuade, prevail over.
Tugaim fa,	I endeavour.
Imhríaim ar,	I ask (beseech).
Fiafhrusigim te,	I ask (enquire).
Seallaim do,	I promise.
Deannuigim do,	I salute.

Cuimhniúím ḡr,	I remember.
Deirim ḡr,	I catch, I overtake.
Stéaraitim ḡr,	I prepare (stéar ḡrt, get ready).
Léigim ṽo,	I allow, permit.
Comairleúisim ṽo,	I advise.
Maitíím ṽo,	I forgive, pardon.
Freagairaim ṽo,	I answer.
Fóiríím ḡr,	I help.
Ériúgeann uiom,	I succeed (lit. It arises with me).
Ciúim te,	I confirm, I corroborate.
Ciú uiom	I can.
Sgáointíím ṽo,	I loose.
Impíúím ḡr,	I beg, I beseech.
Tairteáilim te,	I please.

599. Many verbs require prepositions different from those required by their English equivalents.

Labhráim ḡr,	I speak of.
Fanáim te,	I wait for.
Tráchtáim ḡr,	I treat of.
Ceilim ḡr,	I conceal from.
Sgáraitim te,	I separate from.
Cuirim fíor ḡr,	I send for.
Labhráim te,	I speak to.
Deirim te,	I say to.
Ḣr . . . te,	say, said to (Ḣr is used only in quotation).

ᚦെିରିମ ଆଖାଇଁ ଅପି,	I face (for) (a place).
ଦେବନାମ ମାଗାଇଁ ଫା,	I make fun of, I mock.
ଚମିତିମ ଫା,	I tremble at.
ବାନିମ ତେ (also ଦୋ),	I belong to, I appertain to.
ଦେବିରିମ ବୁଦାଇଁ ଅପି,	I win a victory over.
ତାଇମ ବୋଧିବିଷ୍ଟେ ଆସ,	I am bothered with.
ଏଇତିମ ତେ,	I listen to.
ଦାପି ତେ,	It seems to.
ଶ୍ଲାରିଦିମ ଅପି,	I call for.
ଚିନ୍ନିମ ଅପି,	I excel or surpass in.
ଶୁରିଦିମ ଅପି,	I pray for; also, I beseech. (ଶୁରିଦ ଓପାଇନ୍, pray for us.)
ଫେଁଚ ଅପି,	look at (ଫେଁଚ ଓପାଇଲା, Look at them; ଫେଁଚ ଇବୁ, Examine or try them).
ଫାଗାଇମ ଫଳାନ ଆସ,	I bid farewell to.
ଲେନାଇମ ଦେ,	I stick to.
ଦେବିରିମ ଅପି...ଅପି,	I take hold of...by: as, He caught me by the hand.
ଦୋଲାଇମ ତେ...ଅପି,	ରୁଗ ରେ ଅପି ଲାଇମ ଓପିଲା. Catch her by the hand, ଦେବି ଅପି ଲାଇମ ନିରିବି.
ଦୋଲାଇମ ଅପି,	I sell to...for. He sold me a cow for £10. ଦୋଲ ରେ ବୋ ଲିଓମ ଅପି ଦେଇସ ବ୍ରାନ୍ଟାଇବ,
ଚାଇତିମ ତେ,	I pay for.
ଚରୋଇମ ଅପି, ଚରୋଇଗିମ ଅପି, ଲୁହିମ ଅପି,	I throw at. I begin to (do something).

## The Negative Adverb—Not.

600. Young students experience great difficulty in translating the English negative adverb—"not." We here give the various ways of translating "not."

Not, with the Imperative mood, is translated by ná.

„ „	Subjunctive	„ „	ná <small>n.</small>
„ „	Verbal Noun	„ „	na <small>n.</small>
Indicative Mood	Past Tense	{ statement, níon or cár. question, ná <small>n.</small> or na <small>cá</small> n.	
	All other tenses	{ statement, ní or cá. question, na <small>c</small> , ná.	

"If... not" is translated by muna :\* if the verb be in the past tense use munán.

All the above forms are used in principal sentences only. In dependent sentences "that...not" is always translated by nac or ná, except in the past tense, indicative mood, when nán. or nacán must be used.

Ní, aspirates; cá, eclipses. Cá becomes cár before is and fuil: e.g., cár mé, *It is not I.*

How to answer a question. Yes—No.

601. (a) In Irish there are no fixed words for "Yes" or "No." As a general rule in replying to questions, "Yes" or "No" is translated by using the same verb and tense as has been employed in the question.

\* Pronounced morra.

The subject of the verb used in reply need not be expressed, except when it is contained in the verb ending. In English we frequently use a double reply, as "Yes, I will." "No, I was not," &c. In Irish we use only one reply.

Ófuis tú tinn? Táim. Are you sick? Yes, or I am.

Raiß ré annroin? Ní raibh. Was he there? No.

An bhaca tú Seágán? Did you see John? No.  
Ní bhaca or ní facar.

An bhaca ré an teac? Did he see the house?  
Connaitc. He did.

An tuigseann tú? Do you understand? Yes.  
Tuigsim.

An tcioctaró tú? Ní Will you come? No, I  
tioctaró. will not.

(b) When the question has been asked with any part of the verb *is*, expressed or understood, followed by a **definite** noun, the English subject must be used in the answer, as also must the verb, except when the answer is negative.

An tú an fear? Ní m'pe. Are you the man? No.  
Nac é rin an fear? Is not he the man? Yes,  
he is.

An b' é rin Seágán? Níor Was that John? No, it  
b' é. was not.

Notice also the following :—

FIRST SPEAKER.	SECOND SPEAKER.
Ír mire an teastáipe.	An tú ?
<i>I am the messenger.</i>	<i>Are you ?</i>
Ní h-é rím aír ragsaírt.	Náct é ?
<i>He is not our priest.</i>	<i>Isn't he ?</i>
Ír é an peap é.	Ní h-é.
<i>It is the man.</i>	<i>It is not.</i>

(c) Whenever the question is asked by any part of the verb *ír*, followed by an **indefinite** predicate, the word “Yes” is usually translated by repeating the verb and the indefinite predicate, as—

Náct fuaín an lá é? *Ír* Isn't it a cold day? Yes,  
fuaín. or It is.

Náct maírt é? *Ír* maírt. Is it not good? Yes, or  
It is.

An aige atá an t-aigéad? Is it he who has the  
ír aige. money? Yes.

But in this case the answer may also be correctly given by using the neuter pronoun *eád*. *Ír eád* (or ‘reasd) for “yes;” *ní h-eád* for “no.”

An madaí é rím? *Ní* Is that a dog? No.  
h-eád.

An Saranac é? ‘Seasd. Is he an Englishman ?  
Yes.

Náct maírt é? ‘Seasd. Isn't it good ? It is.

(d) When the question is asked with "who" or "what," the subject alone is used in the answer, and if the subject be a personal pronoun the emphatic form will be used, as—

Cia fuisse é rín? Míre. Who did that? I did.

## CHAPTER VI.

### The Preposition.

602. As a general rule the simple prepositions govern a dative case, and precede the words which they govern: as,

Čáinig ré o Čorcaig. He came from Cork.

Čus ré an t-uball do'n. He gave the apple to the woman.

**Exceptions.** (1) The preposition *toír*, "between," governs the accusative case: as, *toír* Čorcaig agur Limeric, between Cork and Limerick.

(2) *Go* *otí*,\* meaning "to" (*motion*), is followed by the nominative case.

Cuaró ré go otí an teac. He went to the house.

\**Go* *otí* is really a corrupted form of the old subjunctive mood of the verb *tigim*, I come; so that the noun after *go* *otí* was formerly nominative case to the verb.

(3) The preposition **gáin**, “*without*,” governs the dative in the singular, but the accusative in the plural: as,

**Tá ré gáin céill.** He is without sense.  
**Gáin ari gcaíre.** Without our friends.

**603.** The words **timceall** (*around*),\* **trárga** or **tráearga** (*across*), **cóir** (*beside*), **fad** (*along*), **cum†** or **cun** (*towards*), **toirg** (*owing to*), **rála**, **ráltá**, and [**iomctúra**] (*as to, or concerning*), although really nouns, are used where prepositions are used in English. Being nouns, they are followed by the genitive case.

**Ósail ré fad na tráine é.** He struck him along the nose.

**An mbéid tú as dul cum an aonair i mbára?** Will you be going to (towards) the fair tomorrow?

**Ós ríct ré timceall na h-áite seo.** He ran around this place of barley.

**Ós éuadair trárga an ghuairt eorpa.** They went across the field of barley.

For the so-called compound prepositions see par. 608, &c.

**604.** The prepositions **i** (*in*) and **te** (*with*) become **inr** and **teir** before the article: *e.g.* **inr an teannan in**

\* The meanings given in parenthesis are the usual English equivalents, *not the real meaning of the words*.

† The **m** in this word is pronounced like **n**.

*the book; leir an bhean, with the man.* In Munster *ó* (*from*), *oe* (*off, from*), *oo* (*to*), *aisge* (= *as, at, with*), and some others take *r* before the *plural article*—*ó rna feair*, *from the men*; *oo rna buaibh*, *to the cows*.

605. The simple prepositions cause aspiration when the article is not used with them: as, *ar* *baile* *an* *cnuic*. On the top of the hill. *fuair* *ré* *ó* *fean* *an* *tighe* *é*. He got it from the man of the house.

**Exceptions** (1) The prepositions *as*, *at*; *le*, *with*; *ar*, *out*: *go*, *to*, cause neither aspiration nor eclipsis; as, *oo* *tuit* *ré* *le* *Goll*. He fell by Goll. *Cuaird* *ré* *so* *Daire-Átha-Cliat*. He went to Dublin.

*San*, *without*, may aspirate or not.

(2) The preposition *i* or *a*, *in*, causes eclipsis even without the article: as, *Bi* *ré* *i* *Scorcaig*. He was in Cork.

606. The simple prepositions, when followed by the article and a noun in the singular number, usually cause eclipsis: as, *ar* *an* *mbárr*, on the top; *ó* *n* *bhean*, from the man; *rán* *mbaile*, at home.

**Exceptions.** (1) The prepositions *oo*,\* *to*, and *oe*, *of, off, from*, when followed by the article, usually cause aspiration, though in some places eclipsis takes place.

\* *Go* or *go* *orti* is usually used for “*to*” when *motion to* is implied (the Latin *acc.* of motion). *oo* is usually used for “*to*” when *no motion* is implied (the Latin *dative*).

Aspiration is the more common practice: *do'n þearf*, to the man; *oe'n mnaði*, from the woman. They prefix *t* to *r*; as, *Þus ré do'n træðarit é*. He gave it to the priest. *Sa* (=inr an) usually aspirates in Munster; *ra borga móri*, in the big box.

(2) When *gán*, *without*, is followed by the article it produces no change in the initial consonant following: as, *gán an fion*, without the wine; but if the following noun be masculine and begin with a vowel, or be feminine beginning with *r*, *t* is prefixed: as, *gán an t-eun*, without the bird; *gán an t-ráil*, without the eye.

In the Northern dialect aspiration takes place after the preposition and the article.

**607.** When a simple preposition ending in a vowel comes before the possessive adjective *a* (*his, her, or their*), or the possessive *ári*, *our*, and *úri*, *your*, the letter *n* is inserted before the possessive: as, *le n-a láim*, by his hand; *tne n-a mðorðai*, through their palms; *le n-ári gseir*, with (or by) our portion; *le n-úri otoil*, with your permission.

Except the prepositions *do* and *oe*, which become *o'*.

Whenever *go* or *le* comes before any other word beginning with a vowel the letter *n* is usually inserted: as, *o mairiðin go n-oiðce*, from morning till night; *go n-Albain*, to Scotland; *le n-eagla*, with fear. (See par. 29.)

608. In Irish certain nouns preceded by prepositions have often the force of English prepositions. As nouns they are, of course, followed by a genitive case, unless a preposition comes between them and the following noun, when the dative case naturally follows. Such locutions are styled in most grammars "Compound Prepositions," and to account for their construction they give the rule "*Compound Prepositions are followed by the genitive case.*"

609. We give here a fairly full list of such phrases employed in Modern Irish.

1 ṫarairiath,	along with; on the side of.
1 ṫarlaonuise,	
1 látaip,	in the presence of.
or cónaip,	
or coinne,	before; face to face.
ar uct,	
ar ron,	for the sake of, for the love of
ar r̄sáit,	under the pretext of.
1 ṫarlaíair,	
1 ṫarlaonta,	along with, in company with.
1 ṫarlaob,	concerning ; with regard to.
1 gceann,	at the end of.
ré déin,	for, (in the sense of going <i>for</i> ).
1 gcoinne,	
ré déin,	towards.
1 mears,	among, amongst.

アリ アガルð,	opposite.
1 ハ-アガルð,	against.
アリ フラð,	throughout (used of time).
1 e ハ-エアルð,	for want of.
アリ フラð,	throughout (used of space).
1 ゴコル, (1 ゴコモル),	for, for the benefit of.
アリ カル,	behind, at the back of.
1 ハラルð,	after (used of place).
タリ エル, ハ'エル,	after (used of time).
1 ゴコニル, 1 ゴコム,	against.
1 ゴカルルð,	concerning, about.
カム,	to, towards.
(カム), }	
ハ'コノルルð, }	towards.
ハ'コノルルグルð, }	
1 e コル, }	beside, by the side of (a sea, a
コル, }	river, &c.)
1 ハ-エウルð,	against.
ハ'ルル,	according to.
オル フリ,	over, above.
タリ フリ,	beyond, in preference to.
1 e ハ-ル,	beside, by the side of.
1 ゴカルルð, 1 ハル,	during.
1 ハ-アムルð, }	in spite of.
1 ハ-アムルð,	
1 ハ-ル,	for, for the use of.
1 ハ-ル,	near.

## 610. Some of them are followed by Prepositions.

Láim le,	near, beside.
í n- <del>g</del> ar do,	near.
timceall ar,	around ( <i>and touching</i> ).
mar <del>g</del> eall ar,	on account of.
mar aon le,	along with, together with.
í n-éinfeacht le,	together with, at the same
í n-aon- <del>g</del> e le,	time as.

## 611. Examples—(1) Nouns.

Do éuir ré or cionn an	He put it over the door.
doíair é.	
Connac í n-aice an toblair	I saw them near the well.
í aon	
Do riut an gaothar í n- <del>g</del> air	The hound ran after the
an trionnais.	fox.
Cia bí í bprocair Seumair?	Who was along with
	James?
Do éig ré dom an capall	He gave me this horse for
í ro le n- <del>g</del> air an	the priest.
tráigairt.	
Tiocfaidh ar air d' éir an	I shall come back after
tráigairt.	the summer.
Ní fhiul leigear ar b' iú	There is no remedy against
í n- <del>g</del> air an báir.	death.
Do éuair ré fá óeim na	He went for the horses.
scapall.	
Ar feadh an lae.	Throughout the day.
Ar feadh na tíre.	Throughout the country.

Do nérí an leabhar réo.	According to this book.
Cá ré le coir na fáirige.	He is beside the sea.
Do chuir ré an lúb tím- ceall ari mo céann.	He put the loop around my head.

## 612.

## (2) Pronouns.

Cáinig ré im Ósair.	He came after me.
Ná téig 'na n-Ósair réo.	Do not go after these.
Cia bhí 'na fóclóir?	Who was along with him?
Deunfaid é rím ari do fion.	I shall do that for your sake.
Ari céannaingír é réo iem a Ósair?	Did you buy this one for me?
Bíor ari a n-a Ósair.	I was opposite them.
Cá an fuisgeos or ari Scionn.	The lark is above us.
An pairbh tú i n-ári n-aice (i n-aice linn)?	Were you near us?
Bí ré i n-aice liom.	He was near me.
Cáinig riad im a Ósair.	They came against me.

## Translation of the Preposition "For."

613. (a) When "for" means "to bring," "to fetch," use *fá* *óeín*, *a* *g-coinne*, or *ag* *íarpharó*, followed by a genitive case; or *ag* *tríall ari*: as,

Go for the horse.	Téig ag tríall ari an scapall.
He went for John.	Cuaró ré fá óeín Seosamh.

(b) When “*for*” means “to oblige,” “to please,” use *to*, followed by the dative case: as,

Do that for him. Deun *rín to*.

Here is your book for you. ’Seo *ðuít to leabhar*.

Use *to* to translate “*for*” in the phrases “good for,” “bad for,” “better for,” &c.: as,

This is bad for you. *Íf oic ðuít é *reо**.

(c) When “*for*” means “for the use of,” use *te n-aጀarð*, followed by a genitive case, or *to* with dative.

I bought this for the Ceannuigear *é *reо* te*  
priest. *n-aጀarð an tráigairt*  
*(*to*n tráigairt).*

He gave me money for *Tus ré aifgeadu dom lea'*  
you. *aጀarð.*

(d) When “*for*” means “duration of time” use *te*, with the dative case, if the time be *past*, but *an feadó* or *go ceann*, with the genitive case, if the time be *future*. In either case past and future are to be understood, not with regard to present time, but to the time of the action described.

(1) He had been there for *Ói ré ann te bliadain*  
a year when I came. *nuaip taimis mé.*

(2) He stayed there for a *O' fán ré ann an feadó*  
year. *(go ceann) bliadana*

In the first sentence the year is supposed to be completed at the time we are speaking about, and is, therefore, past with regard to the time we are describing.

In the second sentence the time at which the action of staying (if we be allowed to use the word "action") took place at the very beginning of the year that he spent there. The year itself came after the time we are describing; therefore it is future with regard to that time.

It will be a great assistance to the student to remember that *ar* *feadh* or *go ceann* are used when in the English sentence the fact is merely stated, as in sentence (2); and that *te* is used when a secondary tense ought to be used in the English sentence, as in sentence (1).

(e) When "for" means "for the sake of," use *ar* *ron* followed by a genitive case.

He toiled for a little gold. *Šaothraingh* *ré* *ar* *ron* *beag-*  
*áin* *óir*.

(f) When "for" is used in connection with "buying" or "selling," use *ar* followed by a dative case.

He bought it for a pound. *Céannuig* *ré* *ar* *punt* *é*.

I sold it for a shilling. *Óíolaf* *ar* *rsilling* *é*.

(g) "For" after the English verb "ask" is not translated in Irish.

He asked me for a book. *O'* *tarbh* *ré* *teabhar* *óim*.

Ask that man for it. *Tarbh* *ar* *an* *úrfeadh* *goim* *é*.

(h) "For" after the word "desire" (*túil*) is usually translated by *i* (=in): as, Desire for gold, *túil i n-óir* or, *túil i n-óir an óir*.

(i) The English phrase "*only for*" very often means "*were it not for*," "*had it not been for*," and is translated by *muna mbeast*, followed by a nominative.

Only for John the horse would be dead now.      *Mura mbeast Seosán do beast an capall marb aonair.*

#### 614. Note the following Examples.

I have a question <i>for</i> you.	<i>Tá ceirt agam ort.</i>
To play <i>for</i> (a wager).	<i>Imirt an (g)seall.</i>
To send <i>for</i> .	<i>Fíor do cùir . . . . ar.</i>
A cure <i>for</i> sickness.	<i>{ Leigear i n-aigair tinnir.       ,,      ar tinneair.</i>
To wait <i>for</i> .	<i>Féamhaint le.</i>
<i>For</i> your life, don't tell.	<i>Ar o' anam, ná h-innir.</i>
He faced <i>for</i> the river.	<i>Cug ré a agair ar an abhainn.</i>
They fought <i>for</i> ( <i>about</i> ) the Fiannship.	<i>Táoradhair um an bFiannuisgeacht.</i>
Don't blame him <i>for</i> it.	<i>Ná cuir a milleán air (its blame on him).</i>
I have great respect <i>for</i> you.	<i>Tá mear mór agam ort.</i>
This coat is too big <i>for</i> me.	<i>Tá an cùta ro ná-mór dom.</i>
What shall we have <i>for</i> dinner?	<i>Cáidé biaf agam ar ar náinneair?</i>
It is as good for you to do your best.	<i>Tá ré comh maic agat do vícheall do deunam.</i>

## 615. Translation of the Preposition "Of."

(a) Whenever "of" is equivalent to the English possessive case, translate it by the genitive case in Irish.

The son of the man. Mac an ḡiṇ.

The house of the priest. Teagáin ḡráigí.

There are cases in which the English "of," although not equivalent to the possessive case, is translated by the genitive in Irish.

The man of the house. ḡeap an tíse.

A stone of meal. Cloc mine.

(b) Whenever "of" describes the material of which a thing is composed, or the contents of a body, use the genitive case.

A ring of iron. Fáinne iarann.

A cup of milk. Cupán bainne.

A glass of water. Stoine uisce.

(c) When "of" comes after a numeral, or a noun expressing a part of a whole, use *te* with the dative; but if the word after "of" in English be a *personal pronoun*, use one of the compounds of *as* with the personal pronouns.

The first day of the week. An ceathair lá te'n tréasctáin.

One of our hounds. Ceann d' ari nsgaileadh.

Many of the nobles. Mórán te na h-uairí.

One of us was there. Ói duine agaínn ann.

Some of them.	Cuir aca.
One of these (persons).	Tuine aca ro.
A leat is used for "half of it" or "half of them."	
(d) When "of" follows "which," use te with nouns, and ag with pronouns.	
Which of the men?	Cia (ciaca) te na peaprait?
Which of us?	Cia againn?
(e) When "of" means "about" use timciorr or fa.	
They were talking of the	Uiotaip ag caint timciorr
matter.	an juoda.
(f) "Of" after the English verb "ask," "inquire," is translated by te.	
Ask that of John.	Fiafhris riu te Seosan.
(g) When "of" expresses "the means" or "instrument" use te or te.	
He died of old age.	Fuaip re bair le gean-doir.
He died of hunger.	Fuaip re bair leir an ocrar.
He died of a seven days' sickness.	Fuaip re bair te galop react la.
(h) Both of us.	
Both of you.	Sib agraon.
Both of them.	Siau agraon, iad agraon.

## 616. Further Examples.

He is ignorant of Irish.	Tá ré ainiúil i n-an nGaeilge.
The like of him.	A leitέrio (his like).
Such a thing as this.	A leitέrio seo de seo.
Don't be afraid of me.	Ná biodh eaglaopta róimh a.
A friend of mine.	Capa dom.
A friend of yours.	Capa duit.
A horse of mine.	Capall liom.
A horse of Brian's.	Capall le Brian.
I have no doubt of it.	Ní fuil amhras agam air.
A man of great strength.	Peairi is móri neart.
Oisin of mighty strength and vigour.	Oisín ba tóinean neart a'r luic.
(Ba is the past tense of is in the previous sentence.)	
I think much of it.	Tá meairiún neart a'r luic.

## CHAPTER VII.

## Classification of the Uses of the Prepositions.

## 617. AT.

## 1. To denote possession (a) with tá.

Tá rúgian agam. I have a knife.

Tá aitne agam ar an I know that man.

Óigeair róimh.

## (b) With other verbs:

Coimeád ré an físeán aige He kept the knife for him-  
fén. self.

O' fág ré aca iad He left them to them.

2. It is used in a **partitive sense**, of them, &c

Aon duine aca. Anyone of them.

Seach aon aca. Each one of them.

## 3. With verbal nouns to translate the English present participle:

(a) active — Tá ré ag buaileadh an buachaill. He is beating the boy.

(b) passive — Tá an buachaill aga ('gá) buaileadh. The boy is being beaten.

4. With verbal nouns followed by **do**, meaning “while.”

Ag dul doibh. While they were going.

## 5. To express the agent or cause with passive verbs.

Tá an cloch gá (aga) tógsaileadh. The stone is being raised  
ag Séamus. by James.

The English preposition *at* when used with assemblies, e.g. market, fair, school, &c., is usually translated by *an*.

## 618.

## AR, ON, UPON.

1. Literal use: *ər an tbořo*, on the table.

2. In adverbial phrases:

## (a) TIME.

*ər tali*, just now, by and by. *ər ūeřo*, during.

*la ər la*, day by day. *ər maroř*, in the morning.

*ər uasiruš*, by times. *ər an tæčaiř*, immediately.

## (b) PLACE.

*ər vicit*, in existence, at all. *ər cūt*, behind.

*ər leař*, } *ər rgoř*, in school.

*ər ūařře*, } at sea. *ər ūo*, throughout,

*ər ūuřiř*, } *ər neař*, in heaven.

*ər tæř*, on the ground. *ər vořo*, on board.

*ər ūi*, on the point of. *ər talař*, } on earth.

*ər ūo*, in length. *ər talařain*, } *ər ūoř*, by (through)

*ər ūoř*,\* lengthwise. *ər an vořar*, the door.

*tr̄i tpořitce* { *ər ūoř* (*řařo*), three feet long.  
*ər ūeřeřo*, " wide.  
*ər ūořoe*, " high.  
*ər ūořmne*, " deep.

## (c) CAUSE.

*ər an ūořař ūoř*, for that *ər ūeřeřo*, under op-  
 reason, therefore. *ər ūoř*, pressure.

*ər ūoř*, for the sake of. *ər ūoř*, according to the  
*ər ūařla ūoř*, for fear that. *ər ūoř*, will of.

\* *ər a ūořo*, literally *on its length*.

Δη έισιν, hardly, by compulsion. Δη τοξα, at the choice of.

## (d) MANNER AND CONDITION.

Δη σοι Δη θιτ, on any condition.	Δη θειτο, in the form of.
Δη αν τρό, in the manner.	Δη θινθα, in progress.
Δη αξιο, forward.	Δη α λιγεαν, at least.
Δη αξιο Δη αξιο, face to face.	Δη αιρ, back.
Ιεατ Δη ιεατ, side by side.	Δη γενι, backwards.
Δη λαρα, ablaze.	Δη τραρνα, breadthwise.
Δη θυμαρ, in the power of.	Δη βάν, astray.
Βεαγάν Δη θεαγάν, little by little.	Δη γεαράν, } astray.
Δη σάιροε, on credit.	Δη μειργε, drunk.
	Δη γοναρ, trotting.
	Δη ιαρατ, on loan.

## 3. In numbers:

Τηι Δη φιέρο, 28.

Τηιοταρο Δη φιέρο, 23rd.

## 4. (a) Before the verbal noun, which it eclipses or aspirates to form the past participle active.

Δη θυνασθ αν θοραιρ θοιο Having shut the door, θι' ιμτιγεαναη. they went away.

## (b) With the possessive adjective α and verbal noun to form perfect participle passive.

Δη η-α θυρι η-εαγαρι ας, Edited by.

Δη η-α θυρι αμας ας Κοννιασθ η Γαεθιγε, Published by the Gaelic League.

## 5. Emotions felt by a person :

Care, sorrow, &c.	Τά ιμπούδε, θρόν ορμ.
Thirst, hunger, need, sickness.	Τά ταρτ, οστραγ, εαρβατό, τιννεαρ ορμ.
Fear.	Τά εαγια, φαιτέιορ ορμ.
Joy.	Τά λύτζάιρ, ορμ.

## 6. In phrases :

Τιούτακατ ἀρ, favour (conferred) on.	Τά θαοξατ ἀρ, there is danger.
Κιον, Σεαν ἀρ, affection for.	Κιμήνε ἀρ, remembrance of.
Εοταρ, πιορ, αιτνε ἀρ, knowledge of, acquaintance with.	Σαραοτό ἀρ, } complaint Σεαράν ἀρ, } against.
Σημίν ἀρ, horror of, or disgust with.	Πιατ ἀρ, hatred of. Πιασ ἀρ, debt due from.
Τά απταρ αξαμ αιρ, I suspect him.	Κυμαρ ἀρ, power over, capacity for.
Κυμαέτ ἀρ, power over.	Πιασα ἀρ, claim upon.
Ουαιρό ἀρ, victory over.	Τε χεαγατ ἀρ, } of obli-
Ονόριμ ἀρ, honour (given) to.	Ο' ηιασαν ἀρ, } gation Ο' ηαλασ ἀρ, } on.

In the above phrases the agent is expressed by ας where possible, τά Σημίν, Σεαν, εοταρ, κιμήνε, &c., αξαμ ορτ.

7. **AR** is used after various classes of verbs.

(a) Verbs of motion upon or against (*striking, inflicting, &c.*).

Impum p̄ian ar.	I punish.
Teilgim ar (i.e.).	I throw at.
Carad̄ ar.      }	Met.
Tárla ar.      }	
Carad̄ an fear̄ ōrm.	I met the man.
Do ḡað r̄é te cloclaid̄ ōrta.	He threw stones at them.

(b) After the verb **Beirim**.

Beirum ar.	I call (name), (ar before person), induce, persuade, compel a person (to do something).
Beirum iarrhaest ar.	I attempt (something or to do something).
Beirum t̄iol ar.	I requite, repay (a person).
Beirum* f̄a n-vearia ar,	I cause, make (a person do something).
Beirum ḡradd̄ ar.	I love (fall in love with), &c.
Beirum minisḡad̄ ar.	I explain.

(c) After the verb **beirim**.

Beirum ar . . . . ar.	I catch, seize (a person) by (the hand, &c.).
Beirum ar.	I overtake, I catch.
Beirum b̄reiteamhnaí ar,	I judge, pass judgment on.
Beirum b̄uairí ar.	I conquer.

\* Cuim̄um may be used in this sense.

(d) After verbs of Praying, Beseeching, Appealing to.

Նարիամ ար.	I ask, entreat (a person).
Հարօմ ար.	I pray <i>for</i> (sometimes I pray <i>to</i> ); but generally Հարօմ շամ օք ար թոն &c.
Ամրիցիմ ար.	I pray to God for.

I beseech.

(e) After verbs of Speaking about, Thinking of, Treating of, Writing of, &c.

Նախամ ար, I speak of.	Տասանոմ ար, I think of.
Եթաշտամ ար, I treat of.	Տիրութամ ար, I write of,
Հաւորնոցիմ ար, I remember.	or about.

(f) Verbs of looking at:

Բնուշամ ար or Դեպամ ար. I look at.

(g) Verbs of threatening, complaining, offending, displeasing, &c.

Եղարամ ար.	I threaten.
Հոլլիմ ար.	I am troublesome to.
Հերիմ լոշ ար.	I find fault with.

(h) Verbs of concealing, neglecting, hindering, forbidding, refusing, &c.

Եշիմ ար.	I conceal from.
Հորիմեարցամ ար.	I hinder or forbid.
Բարւոցիմ ար.	I neglect.

(i) Verbs of protecting, guarding, guaranteeing against.

Seacáin tú pén ari an. Take care of yourself from  
útruscaill rín. that car.

Seacáin do lám ari an. Take care! That stone  
scloic rín. will hurt your hand.

8. (a) Cuirim is used with verbal nouns and adverbial phrases beginning with ari:

Cuirim ari críct.	I put in a tremble.
Cuirim ari coimeád.	I put on one's guard.
Cuirim ari reachrán.	I set astray.
Cuirim ari cáiltóe.	I put off, delay, postpone.
Cuirim ari scáil.	I put aside.
Cuirim ari neimhniú.	I reduce to nothing, I annihilate.

(b) Also with many nouns:—

Cuirim ceirt ari.	I question.
Cuirim comadoin ari.	I do a kindness to.
Cuirim } crainn ari (cár).	I cast lots for.
Cuirim cuma ari.	I arrange.
Cuirim gairm (fíor) ari.	I send for.
Cuirim lám ari.	I set about.
Cuirim leigear ari.	I apply a remedy to.
Cuirim lúthearán ari.	I lay a snare for.
Cuirim moill ari.	I delay.
Cuirim toirmeairg ari.	I hinder.
Cuirim imribhde ari.	I beseech.

9. *Sním* is used with many nouns meaning "I inflict...on."

<i>Sním</i> <i>baðar</i> <i>ar.</i>	I threaten.
<i>Sním</i> <i>buairíoread</i> <i>ar.</i>	I trouble.
<i>Sním</i> <i>capaoro</i> <i>ar.</i>	I complain of.
<i>Sním</i> <i>eugcón</i> <i>ar.</i>	I wrong.
<i>Sním</i> <i>feall</i> <i>ar.</i>	I act treacherously towards.
<i>Sním</i> <i>rmaðt</i> <i>ar.</i>	I exercise authority over, I restrain.
<i>Sním</i> <i>þreitearmnað</i> <i>ar.</i>	I judge, pass judgment upon.
<i>Sním</i> <i>farþe</i> <i>ar.</i>	I watch.

### 619. AS, OUT OF, FROM.

1. Literal use: out of, from, &c.

<i>Cuaró</i> <i>ré</i> <i>ar</i> <i>an</i> <i>tig.</i>	He went out of the house.
<i>Dul</i> <i>ar</i> <i>an</i> <i>mbeataid.</i>	To depart from life.

2. With various other verbs:

<i>Dúirigim</i> <i>ar</i> <i>coitlað.</i>	I arouse from sleep.
<i>Cuirim</i> <i>ar</i> <i>reitb.</i>	I dispossess.
<i>Croðaim</i> <i>ar.</i>	I hang from.
<i>Cuirim</i> <i>aram.</i>	I utter (a shriek, &c.).
<i>Leigim</i> <i>ar.</i>	I let off.
<i>Sgjumoraim</i> <i>ar.</i>	I erase from.
<i>Tuitim</i> <i>ar</i> <i>a</i> <i>céile.</i>	To fall asunder.
<i>Tarriains</i> <i>ar</i> <i>a</i> <i>céile.</i>	To pull asunder.

3. To express origin, cause; ground of proof; confidence, trust in :

Ar gac air.	From every quarter.
Socair do baint ar.	Derive benefit from.
An fát ar.	The reason why.
Ar ro ruar.	Henceforth.
Ír follur ar.	It is evident from.
Ioncraigte ar.	Inferable from.
Mumraigín ar.	Confidence in.

4. After verbs, of boasting or taking pride in :

Maoróim ar.	I boast of.
Glórmaí ar.	Glorying in.
Lánman ar féin.	Full of himself.

620. Cun (cum), TOWARDS.

1. Cum is used after verbs of motion :

Cuairt ré cun an tise.	He went towards the house.
Cup cun fairsge.	To put to sea.

2. Before verbal noun to express purpose :

Cáinig ré cun an capaill	He came to sell the horse.
do thíol.	

## 3. In Phrases, as :

Ταῦται τὸν εἰπέ.	To bring to pass.
Ζαῦται τὸν εἰδαμ.	I take for myself.
Συν τὸν ναῖτ.	To put to death.
Λεῖτ τὸν ναῖτ.	Let die.
Στεργτα τὸν οἰτρε.	Prepared for work.
Συν τῷ.	In order that.
Ζειδιν τὸν.	I pray to.
Τοῦτ τὸν ναῖτεατ.	To go to law.

621.      **τε, FROM, OUT OF.**

## 1. Literal use :

Ταῖνιν τε.	I take from.
Εἰριξιν τε.	I arise from.
Ταῖτιν τε.	I fall from.
Σζαοῖτιν τε.	I loose from (anything).

## 2. Partitive use :

Ὥροντε τε να ταοινιθ.	Some of the people.
Ὥοινε τε να φεαριατ.	One of the men.
Φεαριοεμιντηρ Ματζαμηνα.	One of the O'Mahoney's.

Often before the relative it is equivalent to a superlative relative :

Θευρρατο γατ νιό τ' α	I will give everything I have.
θρυτ αγαμ.	

17. *Is é an fear is aonraoibh t' a bhracair niamh.* He is the tallest man I ever saw.

18. *Ni mait leis níodh t' a dtuigsear do.* He does not like anything you gave him.

**3. In the following phrases:**

de ðring, because	ð' ðipite, for certain
ð' eadla ðo, lest	ðe ðnæt, usually
ð' aor, of age	ðe ðniom, in effect
ðe fior, perpetually	ðe m' iu, to my knowledge
ðe ðrum, owing to	ðe vit, } for lack of,
ð' eir, after	ð' earfard, } want of
ðe ðeoin, willingly	ð' airmðeoin, unwillingly,
ðe fui le, in expectation of	in spite of
	ðe caoib, concerning

#### 4. After following verbs, &c.:

Fiafhusigim ve.	I ask (enquire) of.
Leanaim ve.	I adhere to.
Lionta ve (te).	Filled with.
Lán ve.	Full of.
Sním tagairt ve.	I mention.
Sním úrásid ve.	I make use of.
Sním ... ve ...	I make ... out of (from) ...
Léitigm viom	I let slip.

5. To translate "with," &c., in phrases like *ve tēim*,  
with a leap, at a bound.

622.

TO, TO, FOR.

## 1. Literal use :

(a) After adjectives (generally with *ir*) :

cinnle <i>to</i> ,	certain for (a person).
cóir <i>to</i> ,	right for (a person).
éigean <i>to</i> ,	necessary for.
maic <i>to</i> ,	good for.
feair <i>to</i> ,	better for.

## (b) After nouns :

( <i>an</i> ) i rocad <i>to</i> ,	for the advantage of.
( <i>ir</i> ) beatá <i>to</i> ,	(is) his life.
( <i>ir</i> ) aétair <i>to</i> ,	(is) his father.

## (c) After verbs :

Aitním <i>to</i> , I command.	Cinnim <i>to</i> , I appoint for.
Bronnaim <i>to</i> ( <i>ar</i> ) I present to.	Comairíseáim <i>to</i> , I advise.
Deansaíscim <i>to</i> , I vouchsafe to.	Óiúltaim <i>to</i> , I renounce.
Fógraím <i>to</i> , I announce to.	Fógsaím <i>to</i> , I am of use to.
Freaghráim <i>to</i> , I answer.	Seallaim <i>to</i> , I promise.
Seilim <i>to</i> , do homage to.	Léigim <i>to</i> , I allow, let.
Órduisgim <i>to</i> , I order.	Tairbeánaím <i>to</i> , Teaghránaím <i>to</i> , I show
Sábam <i>to</i> (or) I trample.	Coislim <i>to</i> , I spare.

## 2. To express the agent:

After the verbal noun, preceded by *ap*, *as*, &c.:  
*Ap vteact annro vðib.* On their arrival here.

With the participle of necessity, participles in  
 ion, &c.:

*Ni molta ðuit e.* He must not be praised  
 by you.

*Ir é ðin ir inðeanta ðuit.* That's what you ought to  
 do.

3. For its use in connection with the verbal noun see  
 pars. 563, 568, 570.

## 623.

*þá* or *þe*, UNDER, ABOUT, CONCERNING.

## 1. Literal use: as,

*Tá þe þá 'n mboþo.* It is under the table.

2. *þá* is used in forming the multiplicatives:

*A tþi þe vðó*, twice three.

*A vðó þe ceatærí*, four times two.

## 3. In adverbial phrases:

<i>þá comair</i> , (keeping) for.	<i>þá leit</i> , separately.
<i>þá vðeo</i> , at last.	<i>þá ðeirpeað</i> , at last.
<i>þá fðeac</i> , individually,	<i>þá man</i> , just so (as).
separately.	

## 624.

## SÁN, WITHOUT.

## 1. Literal use:

SÁN pINGINN IM PHÓCA.

Without a penny in my  
pocket.2. To express *not* before the verbal noun:

ABHÁIR LEIR SÁN TEACHT.

Tell him not to come.

## 625.

## SÓ, WITH.

## 1. This preposition used only in a few phrases:

generally before TEAT, *a half*.

MILE SÓ TEAT. A mile and a half.

SLAT SÓ TEAT. A yard and a half.

## 626.

## SÓ, TO, TOWARDS.

## 1. Literal use: motion, as—

SÓ LUIMNEAC.

To or towards Limerick.

## 2. In Phrases:

Ó uaIR SÓ H-uaIR.

From hour to hour.

Ó nÓIN SÓ CÉITE.

From evening to evening.

Ó MÁRÚIN SÓ H-ORÓCÉ.

From morning till night.

627. 1 (in, *ann*), IN, INTO (*Eclipsing*).

1. Of time :

1nř an tSámarad. In Summer.

2. Of motion to a place :

1aři uteačt i n-Éirinn do Patrick having come into  
Írásorlaig. Ireland.

3. Of rest at a place :

Tá rē i n'Doře. He is in Derry.

4. In following phrases :

1 n-aoineadh le, along with.	1 n-ašair, against.
1 n-oiadair, after.	1 gceann, at end of.
1 gcoinne, against.	1 gcomhair, in front of.
1 ñroscail, in company with.	1 meařs, among.
1 utimchíoll, about.	

5. After words expressing esteem, respect, liking, &c.,  
for something :

Oúil i n-ðr. Desire for gold.

6. Used predicatively after TÁ :

Táim im' ñeasrláidír aonair. I am a strong man now.

7. In existence, extant :

1r bheář an aimpri ačá It's fine weather we're  
ann. having

Ні соні ڈuit тul амас ۷ an аімріп ғуарі атл ann аноір.

You ought not to go out *considering* the cold weather we have now.

8. Used after тл to express "to be able."

Ні bionn ann реін 1ompðó. He cannot turn.

9. After cuір, өеір, тul, in phrases like:

Суірім ۷ ғсуірінне то. I remind.

Тul ۷ ғосдарі то. To benefit.

## 628. 101R, BETWEEN, AMONG.

1. Literal use:

нор 101р na Романcaiб, a custom among the Romans.

деісfір еаtоrрrа, difference between them.

## 2. 101R...АГУС, BOTH...AND.

101р ғаірбір агур 6oct, both rich and poor.

101р атaiр агур тас, both father and son.

101р қаорcaiб агур սанaiб, both sheep and lambs.

101р ғеаraiб 1r тіnaiб, both men and women.

## 629. 1e, WITH.

1. Literal use, with:

1eіr an таoр, with the steward.

2. With *ír* to denote possession:

Ír liomra é. It is my own. It belongs to me.  
 Cia leir iad? Who owns them?

3. With *ír* and adjectives to denote "in the opinion of:"

Ír fiau liom é. I think it worth my while.  
 'Oo b' fada leir. He thought it long.

## 4. To denote instrument or means:

Ómíreadh an fúinneog te The window was broken  
 cloic. by a stone.  
 Fuaigh sé bár leir an ocras. He died of hunger.  
 Lorgadh te teinrigh é. He was burned with fire.

## 5. After verbs or expressions of motion:

Amaic leir, Out (he went).  
 Siap uib! Stand back!  
 T' imteig ri téisti, She departed.

## 6. With verbs of touching; behaviour towards; saying to; listening to; selling to; paying to; waiting for:

Éirt liom, Listen to me.  
 Dáinnim te, I touch.  
 Labhrainm te, I speak to.  
 'Oíoláir an bó leir, I sold the cow to him.  
 Ná fán liom, Do not wait for me.

7. After words expressing comparison with, likeness to, severance from, union with, peace with, war with, expectation of.

Tá ré cōm álto liom.	He is as tall as I.
Tá ré coimail leat.	He is like you.
Do r̄sáin ré leo.	He separated from them.

8. With verbal noun to express purpose, intention (see pars. 567, 569).

9. In following phrases:—

te h-āgaird, for (use of),	te coir, near, beside.
te h-uict, with a view to.	láimh te, near.
te h-aif, beside.	mañ aon te, along with.
te fáinaird, downward.	taobh te, beside.

### 630. *mar*, LIKE TO, AS.

1. Literal use: *as, like to.*

mar̄ r̄in, thus	āgair̄ mar̄ r̄in do, and so on.
Do ḡlac ré mar̄ c̄eile i.	He took her for a spouse.
fá mar̄ āthuairt ré,	(according) as he said.

2. Before relative particle *a*, it is equivalent to *as, how, where, &c.*

an ait̄ mar̄ ār̄aibh ré,	the place where he was.
---------------------------	-------------------------

3. For an idiomatic use of *mar̄*, see par. 353.

## 631.                   Ó, FROM, SINCE.

1. Since (of time) : as,

ó tūr, from the beginning.      ó fóm, ago.

Conjunction : as,

Ó nád ńfacsar ńuó aři ńic, tágasar ańaite ařir.

Since I saw nothing I came home again.

2. Of place, motion from :

Ó Ériunn,      from Erin.

3. In a modal sense :

óto čloridé,      with all thy heart.

bočt ó (i) rpioprató,      poor in spirit.

4. After words expressing severance from, distance from, going away from, turning from, taking from, exclusion from, cleansing, defending, protecting, healing. alleviating.

## 632.                    ÓS, OVER.

Used only in a few phrases as :

óř cionn, above, over.      bun óř cionn, upside down.

óř iřiol, silently, secretly.      óř ářo loudly.

## 633. ΡΟΙΜ, BEFORE.

## 1. Of time :

Τεις ποιμιν ποιμ (cun) Ten minutes to three.

Α τρι.

Ροιμε ρεο. Before this, heretofore,  
formerly.

Ροιμε ριν. Previously.

2. Of fleeing before, from ; coming in front of ; lying  
before one (=awaiting) ; putting before one  
(=proposing to oneself) :

Σινέ θυμεαρ ποιμε ε ρεο Whoever proposes to do  
νο θευναμ.

Οι αν σιμηφιασθ ας μιτ ποιμ The hare was running  
να κοναιθ. from the hounds.

3. After expressions of fear, dislike, welcome, &c. :  
Ηλ βιοσ εαγια ορτ πομπα. Do not be afraid of them.  
Παιτε πομπατ (πομπαιθ) ! Welcome !

## 634. ΤΑΡ, BEYOND, OVER, PAST.

## 1. Of motion (place and time) :

Λειμ ρε ταρ αν μβατια. He leaped over the wall.

Αν μι ρεο ξαθ τοραινν. Last month.

## 2. Figuratively : "in preference to," "beyond."

Ταρ μαρ οι ρε τεις Compared with what it was  
μβιασθα πισεασθ ο ποιμ. 30 years ago.

Ταρ μαρ ιυδ ιιγκεασθ οδ. Beyond what was lawful  
for him.

## 3. In following phrases :

taul cap, transgress.      teacht cap, refer to, treat of  
 cap eir, after.      cap air, back.  
 Cap ceann go, notwithstanding.

## 635. TRÉ, (TRÍ), THROUGH, BY MEANS OF.

## 1. Physically, through :

Tré n-a láimh.      Through his hands.

## 2. Figuratively, " owing to " :

Tríodh inn.      Owing to that.

N.B.—In the spoken language tríodh is generally used instead of tré or tréar.

## 636. UM, ABOUT, AROUND.

1. Time : um tíanáona, in the evening.

2. Place : um an tíis, around the house.

3. About : of putting or having clothing on.

Do chuirfeadh aumpa a They put on their clothes.  
 gcuiridh eadairis.

4. Cause : uime inn, therefore.

## PARSING.

637. A. Parse each word in the following sentence:  
 Αὐεῖτο Σευμαρ̄ συν̄ τεῖτο φέιν̄ ἀν̄ καραλ̄ το̄ ὅ: αἰγε̄  
 (Prep. Grade, 1900).

Αὐεῖτο An irreg. trans. verb, indic. mood, present tense, analytic form of the verb οὐεῖν (verbal noun, οὐάθο).

Σευμαρ̄ A proper noun, first declen., genitive Σευματ̄, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen., nom. case, being subject of αὐεῖτο.

συν̄ A conjunction used before the past tense: compounded of γο and πο.

[το̄] The dependent form, past tense, of the verb ιτ.

τεῖτο A prepositional pronoun (or a pronominal preposition), 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender. Compounded of τε and τε.

φέιν̄ An indeclinable noun, added to τεῖτο for the sake of emphasis.

ἀν̄ The definite article, nom. sing. masc., qualifying the noun καραλ̄.

καραλ̄ A com. noun, first declen., genitive καραλ̄, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend. and nom. case, being the subject of the suppressed verb [το̄].

to A particle used as a sign of the past tense, causing aspiration; but here it has also the force of a relative.

ti An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood past tense, analytic form of the verb *táim* (verbal noun, *beit*).

áigé A prepositional pronoun, 3rd sing., masc. gender, compounded of *áig* and *e*.

B. Parse the following sentence: *Do cuití rí fóir móra ari veairg-láirgád i n-óisíon tíge na gcoile marún lae bealtaine.* (Junior Grade, 1900).

Do A particle used as the sign of the past tense, causing aspiration.

cuití A reg. trans. verb, indic. mood. past tense, analytic form of the verb *cuitíum* (verbal noun, *cúp*).

ri A personal pronoun, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gend., conjunctive form, nominative case, being the subject of the verb *cuití*.

fóir A com. noun, first declen., gen. *fóir*, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender, accusative case, being the object of the verb *cuití*.

**móna** A common noun, third declension, nom. móin, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gender, and genitive case, governed by the noun **þóð**.

**áf** A preposition, governing the dative case.

**þealþ-lærtá** A compound verbal noun, genitive **þealþ-lærtá**, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition **áf**.

**í** A preposition, governing the dative case, and causing eclipsis.

**víon** A com. noun, first declens., gen. vín, 3rd pers. sing. masc. gender and dative case, governed by preposition **í**.  
 (N.B.—This word may also be second declension).

**tíse** An irreg. com. noun, nom. teac, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend., genitive case, governed by the noun **víon**.

**na** The definite article, genitive sing. feminine, qualifying **þcoite**.

**þcoite** A common noun, second declension, nom. þcoit, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gend. and genitive case, governed by the noun **tíse**.

**marom** A com. noun, second declension, gen. marone, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gend. and dative case, governed by the preposition **an** (understood).

**Læ-beatcaine** A compound proper noun, nom. **læ beatcaine**, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend. and genitive case, governed by the noun **marom**.

**C. Parse: Tāim as tol cum an aonairg (Junior, '98).**

**Tāim** An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood, present tense, 1st pers. sing., synthetic form, of **tā** (verbal noun, **beit**).

**as** A prep., governing the dative case.

**tol** A verbal noun, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition **as**.

**cum** A noun (dative case, governed by **to** understood) used as a preposition, governing the genitive case.

**an** The definite article, gen. sing. masc., qualifying the noun **aonairg**.

**aonairg** A common noun, first declen., nom. **aonac**, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender, and genitive case governed by **cum**.

D. Parse: **Ní cón̄t óuit é do bualat.**

**ní** A negative adverb, causing aspiration,  
 modifying the suppressed verb *ír*.  
**[ír]** The assertive verb, present tense, ab-  
 solute form.  
**cón̄t** A common adjective, positive degree,  
 comparative *cón̄ta*, qualifying the  
 phrase *é do bualat*.  
**óuit** A prep. pronoun, 2nd pers. sing. com-  
 pound of *do* and *tú*.  
**é** A personal pronoun, 3rd pers. sing.,  
 nom. case, disjunctive form, being  
 the subject of the suppressed verb *ír*.  
**do** A preposition, causing aspiration, and  
 governing the dative case.  
**bualat.** A verbal noun, genitive *bualte*, 3rd  
 pers. sing., dative case, governed by  
 the preposition *do*.

N.B.—*É do bualat* is the subject of the *sentence*.

E. Parse: **Táinig ré le capall a ceannad.**

**Táinig** An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood,  
 past tense, 3rd pers. sing. of the verb  
*tigim* (verbal noun, *teach*).

**ré** A pers. pron, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen., conjunctive form, nom. case, being the subject of *táinig*.

**te** A preposition governing the dative case.

**capall** A common noun, first declens. gen. *capall*, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend. and dative case governed by *te*.

**▲** The softened form of the preposition *oo*, which causes aspiration, and governs the dative case.

**ceannac.** A verbal noun, genitive *ceannuigte*, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition **▲**.

### IDIOMS.

#### TÁ...AΓAM, I HAVE.

**638.** As already stated there is no verb “*to have*” in Irish. Its place is supplied by the verb *tá* followed by the preposition *ag*. The direct object of the verb “*to have*” in English becomes the subject of the verb *tá* in Irish: as, I have a book. *Tá leabhar agam*. The literal translation of the Irish phrase is “*a book is at me*.”

This translation appears peculiar at first sight, but it is a mode of expression to be found in other languages. Most students are

familiar with the Latin phrase "*Est mihi pater.*" I have a father (lit. there is a father to me); and the French phrase *Ce livre est à moi.* I own this book (lit. This book is to me).

We give here a few sentences to exemplify the idiom:—

He has the book.	Tá an teabhar aige.
I have not it.	Ní fuil ré agram.
Have you my pen?	An tbfuil mo peann aghat?
The woman had the cow.	Úi an tó agh an mheoi.
The man had not the horse.	Ní raibh an capall agh an bhean.
Will you have a knife to-morrow?	An mbáidh tú an aghat i mbáraí?
He would not have the dog.	Ní bhíadó an madra aige.
We used to have ten horses.	Ó do thioth teití gcapaill aghainn.

### IS TIOM, I OWN.

**639.** As the verb "*have*" is translated by *tá* and the preposition *ag*, so in a similar manner the verb "*own*" is translated by the verb *is* and the preposition *te*. Not only is the verb "*to own*," but also all expressions conveying the idea of *ownership*, such as: The book belongs to me: the book is mine, &c.; are translated by the same idiom.

I own the book.

The book is mine.

The book belongs to me.

} *Is tiom an teabhar.*

The horse was John's.

The horse belonged to  
John.

John owned the horse.

} **Dá te Seasán an capall.**

Notice the position of the words. In translating the verb "*have*" the verb *ta* is separated from the preposition *as* by the noun or pronoun; but in the case of "*own*" the verb *is* and the preposition *te* come together. (See par. 589, &c.)

I have the book.

**Tá an leabhar *as*am.**

I own the book.

**Is liom an leabhar.**

In translating such a phrase as "*I have only two cows*," the noun generally comes after the preposition *as*: so that this is an exception to what has been said above.

I have only two cows.

**Ní fuil *as*am aict *dá* buin.**

### I KNOW.

**640.** There is no verb or phrase in Irish which can cover the various shades of meaning of the English verb "*to know*." First, we have the very commonly used word *peasáir* (or *peasáir me*), *I know*; but this verb is used only after negative or interrogative particles, and has only a few forms. Again, we have the verb *aicním*, *I know*; but this verb can only be used in the sense of *recognising*. Finally we have the three very commonly used phrases, *ta eoláir *as*am*,

ta aitne agam, and ta a phior agam, all meaning "*I know;*" but these three expressions have three different meanings which must be carefully distinguished.

Whenever the English verb "*know*" means "*to know by heart*," or "*to know the character of a person*," "*to know by study*," &c., use the phrase ta eolap ag...an.

Whenever "*know*" means "*to recognise*," "*to know by appearance*," "*to know by sight*," &c., use the phrase ta aitne ag...an. This phrase is usually restricted to *persons*.

When "*know*" means "*to know by mere information*," "*to happen to know*," as in such a sentence as "*Do you know did John come in yet?*" use the phrase ta a phior ag, e.g. Ófhlil a phior agat an dtáinig Seoigean i rteach fóir?

As a rule young students experience great difficulty in selecting the phrases to be used in a given case. This difficulty arises entirely from not striving to grasp the real meaning of the English verb. For those who have already learned French it may be useful to state that as a general rule ta eolap agam corresponds to *je sais* and ta aitne agam to *je connais*.

ta aitne agam air acht ni fhlil eolap agam air. *Je le connais mais je ne le sais pas.* I know him by sight but I do not know his character. "*Do you know*

*that man going down the road?"* Here the verb "know" simply means recognise, therefore the Irish is: *Úfuit aitne agat ař an Úfearn roin atd ag dul riord an bóthar?* If you say to a fellow-student "*Do you know your lessons to-day?*" You mean "*Do you know them by rote?*" or "*Have you studied them?*" Hence the Irish would be: "*Úfuit eolar agat ař do ceachtannaiř inmíu?*"

Notice also the following translations of the verb *know*.

*íř mait íř eol tom,* 'Tis well I know.

*íř fiorac (fearfac) tom,* I know.

*deirim an tuid atd ař* I say what I know.

*eolar agam,*

### I LIKE, I PREFER.

641. "*I like*" and "*I prefer*" are translated by the expressions *íř mait (ař, ait) liom* and *íř fearrí liom* (it is good with me; and, it is better with me).

I like milk.

*íř mait liom bainne.*

He prefers milk to wine.

*íř fearrí leir bainne ná fion.*

Does the man like meat?

*An mait leir an Úfearn feoil?*

Did you like that?

*Ař mait leat e rin?*

I liked it.

*Da mait liom e.*

We did not like the water.

*Níor mait linn an t-uifge.*

642. If we change the preposition "te" in the above sentences, for the preposition "do," we get

another idiom. "It is really good for," "It is of benefit to." *Ír maist òom é.* It is good for me; (*whether I like it or not*).

He does not like milk but it is good for him.

*Ní maist leir bainne acht ír maist òó é.*

**N.B.**—In these and like idiomatic expressions the preposition "te" conveys the person's own ideas and feelings, whether these are in accordance with fact or not. *Ír piú liom val go h-Albain.* I think it is worth my while to go to Scotland (*whether it is really the case or not*). *Ír mói liom an luac ron.* I think that a great price. *Ír ruapad liom é rin.* I think that trifling (*another person may not*).

The word "think" in such phrases is not translated into Irish.

*Ír piú òuit val go h-Albain.* It is really worth your while to go to Scotland (*whether you think so or not*).

### TIG LIOM, I CAN, I AM ABLE.

**643.** Although there is a regular verb *feuoraím*, meaning *I can, I am able*, it is not always used. The two other expressions often used to translate the English verb "*I can*," are *tig liom* and *ír féidir liom*.

The following examples will illustrate the uses of the verbs.

### Present Tense.

<i>feudaim, tig liom*</i> or <i>if féidir liom, †</i>	}	I can, or am able.
<i>feudann tú, tig leat</i> or <i>if féidir leat.</i>		Thou canst or art able.
&c.,	}	
&c.		

### Negative.

<i>ni feudaim, ni tig liom; or</i> <i>ni féidir liom.</i>	}	I cannot, I am not able.

### Interrogative.

<i>An tig leat? or</i> <i>An féidir leat?</i>	Can you? or are you able?
--	---------------------------

### Negative Interrogative.

<i>Náctig leir? or</i> <i>Náct féidir leir?</i>	Can he not? or is he not able?
--	-----------------------------------

### Past Tense.

<i>O' feudair, taimis liom, or</i> <i>do b' féidir liom.</i>	}	I could, or was able.

### Imperfect.

*O' feudainn, tigeas ò liom.* I used to be able.

\* Literally: It comes with me

† It is possible with me.

## Future.

Feuorfas, tioctfas ñiom. I shall be able.

## Conditional.

O' feuorfasinn, do tioctfas ñiom. } I would be able.

Ni férfaip leir, (He thinks) he cannot.

Ni férfaip óð, He cannot (It is absolutely impossible for him).

## I MUST.

644. The verb “*must*,” when it means necessity or duty, is usually translated by the phrase *ni fuláip* or *caitfiró*. This latter is really the third person singular, future tense of *caitím*; but the present and other tenses are also frequently used. It may also be very neatly rendered by the phrase, *ír éigean do* (lit. *it is necessary for*).

ni fuláip óðom, caitfiró mé, or } I must.  
ír éigean do.

ni fuláip òuit, caitfiró tú, or } You must.  
ír éigean òuit.

ni fuláip óð, caitfiró ré, or } He must.  
ír éigean óð  
&c., &c.

The English phrase “*have to*” usually means “*must*,” and is translated like the above: as, *I have to go home now*. *Caitfiró mé oul a báile anoir.*

The English verb “*must*,” expressing duty or necessity, has no past tense of its own. The English past tense of it would be “*had to* :” as, “*I had to go away then.*” The Irish translation is as follows:—

NIOR Ó'FHLAÍP ÓDOM, CÁIT MÉ, OR }  
DO Ó'ÉIGEAN ÓDOM. } I had to.

NIOR Ó'FHLAÍP ÓUIT, CÁIT TÚ, OR }  
DO Ó'ÉIGEAN ÓUIT. } You had to.

&c., &c.

The English verb “*must*” may also express a supposition; as in the phrase “*You must be tired.*” The simplest translation of this is “*Ní fhláip go bhfuil tuíppre oif.*” or, “*Ní fhláip ná tá tuíppre oif.*” The phrase “*is coparail go,*” meaning “*It is probable that,*” may also be used: as, *Is coparail go bhfuil tuíppre oif.*

The English phrase “*must have*” always expresses supposition, and is best translated by the above phrase followed by a verb in the past tense, as, “*You must have been hungry,*” *Ní fhláip go raibh ocras oif.* *He must have gone out,* *Ní fhláip go noeacairíodh sé amach.*

*Ní fhláip gurí éuairí (or go noeacairí) fé amach,* is used in Munster

### I ESTEEM.

645. *I esteem* is translated by the phrase **TÁ MEAR AIGHM AN**. Literally, “*I have esteem on.*

I esteem John.	Tá mear agham ar Séasán.
Did you esteem him ?	Raið mear aghat aip?
He says that he greatly esteeems you.	Deir sé go bhfuil mear móri aige oítrá.

## I DIE.

**646.** Although there is a regular verb, *eus, die*, in Irish it is not often used; the phrase *gseibim* *bár*, *I find death*, is usually employed now. The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

The old man died yester- day.	Þuairí an rean-fear bár iné.
We all die.	gSeibimír uile bár.
I shall die.	gSeosbaír bár.
They have just died.	Táirí tar éir báir o'fagáil
You must die.	Caitfirír tú bár o'fagáil.

## I OWE.

**647.** There is no verb “*owe*” in Irish. Its place is supplied by saying “*There is a debt on a person*.”

Tá þiac\* oítm.      *I owe.*

Whenever the amount of the debt is expressed the word *þiac* is usually omitted and the sum substituted.

He owes a pound.	Tá púnt aip.
You owe a shilling.	Tá fígilín oírt.

\* The plural of this word, *þiacá*, is very frequently used in this phrase.

When the person to whom the money is due is mentioned, the construction is a little more difficult: as, *I owe you a pound* as, *Tá púnt aghat órm*, i.e., You have (*the claim of*) a pound on me—the words in brackets being always omitted.

He owes me a crown.	Tá corán agam aír.
Here is the man to whom you owe the money.	Seo é an fear a (go) bhrúil an t-aingíead aige órm.

### I MEET.

648. The verb “*meet*” is usually translated by the phrase “*there is turned on*,” e.g., “*I meet a man*” is translated by saying “*A man is turned on me*.” *Cártar fear órm* (liom or dom); but the phrase *buailtear* (or *tábla*) *fear órm* is also used. *I met the woman*, *do caradh an bhean órm* (liom or dom).

They met two men on the road.	Do caradh beirtear fear órta aír an mbótar.
I met John.	Buail Seán umam.

### Physical Sensations.

649. All physical sensations, such as hunger, thirst, weariness, pain, &c., are translated into Irish by saying that “*hunger, thirst, &c., is on a person*;” as, I

am hungry. *Tá ocráig orm.* Literally, *hunger is on me.* He is thirsty. *Tá tarpt air.* Literally, *thirst is on him.*

The same idiom is used for emotions, such as **pride, joy, sorrow, shame, &c.** The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

Úfuit ocráig oifte?	Are you hungry?
Ní fuit ocráig oifim aonair.	I am not hungry now.
Ní an-tarpt oifimh inoibh.	We were very thirsty
Ní ana tarpt oifimh inoibh.	yesterday.
Úfuit náirfe oifte?	Are they ashamed?
Ní náirfe an traoisairiúil airí.	She was very much ashamed.
Néire ñeáidh móri air.	He will be very proud.
Raiib tuilleo oifte?	Were you tired?
Ná neáidh eagla oifte.	Don't be afraid.
Tá ana cooilte oifim.	I am very sleepy.
Tá rlaighoán oifte.	You have a cold.

Whenever there is a simple adjective in Irish corresponding to the English adjective of *mental* or *physical sensation*, we have a choice of two constructions, as:—

I am cold.	Tá mé fuair	or	Tá fuasct* oifim.
You are sick.	Tá tú tinn	„	Tá tinnear oifte.
	(or bpreoite)		
I was weary.	Ní mé tuilleoead	„	Ní tuilleo oifim.

\* Distinguish between *rlaighoán* a cold (a disease) and *fuasct*, the cold, coldness (of the weather) and the adjective *fuair*, cold.

Tá mé tinn and tá tinneár oírn have not quite the same meaning, *Tá mé tinn* means *I feel sick*; but *tá tinneár oírn* means *I am in some sickness, such as fever, &c.*

### I CANNOT HELP.

650. The English phrase “I cannot help that,” is translated by saying *I have no help on that*. Ni fuit neárt agham aip rín. The word *teigear*, “cure,” may be used instead of *neárt*.

When “cannot help” is followed by a present participle in English, use *ni* {fíradaim  
férdiríl liom} *san*, with verbal noun: as, *I cannot help laughing*, *ni* {fíradaim  
férdiríl liom} *san* *sáipriðe*.

### I AM ALONE.

651. There are two expressions which translate the English word “alone” in such sentences as I am alone, He is alone, &c., i.e., *Táim im aonair*, or *Táim liom féin* (I am in my oneship, or I am by (with) myself). He is alone. *Tá ré na aonair*, or *Tá ré leir féin*. She was alone. *Úi ri 'na n-aonair*, or *Úi ri leiti féin*. We shall be alone. *Déimíod 'nár n-aonair*, or *déimíod linn féin*.

### I ASK.

652. The English word “ask” has two distinct meanings according as it means “beseech” or “inquire.” In Irish there are two distinct verbs, viz.,

لَّا يَرْأَى, I ask (*for a favour*), and فَيَرْجِعُ إِلَيْهِ, I ask (*for information*). Before translating the word "ask" we must always determine what is its real meaning, and then use لَّا يَرْأَى or فَيَرْجِعُ accordingly.

Ask your friend for money. لَّا يَرْأَى أَيْمَانَكُمْ أَنْ تَوْلِي  
صَدَاقَكُمْ.

Ask God for those graces. لَّا يَرْأَى اللَّهُ مَا تَرْتَبِعُ  
عَلَيْهِ أَنْ تَلْهُمَّنَّكُمْ.

Ask him what o'clock it is. فَيَرْجِعُ إِلَيْهِ أَنْ تَسْأَلَهُ  
مَا الْأَوْقَاتُ الْمُرْبَّعَةُ.  
He asked us who was that  
at the door. أَنْ تَسْأَلَنَا مَنْ هُوَ  
عَلَيْهِ الْمَوْلَى.

They asked me a question. أَنْ تَسْأَلَنِي سُؤْلٌ  
مُّعَجَّلٌ.

## 653.

## I DO NOT CARE.

I do not care.	لَّا يَرْأَى لِي.
It is no affair of mine.	لَّا يَرْأَى مِنْيَ.
Is it not equal to you?	نَأْقَدْ لَكَ مِنْيَ?
It is no affair of yours.	لَّا يَرْأَى مِنْكَ.
You don't care.	لَّا يَرْأَى لَكَ.
He does not care.	لَّا يَرْأَى لَهُ.
It is no affair of his.	لَّا يَرْأَى مِنْهُ.
We did not care.	لَّا يَرْأَى لَنَا.
It was no affair of ours.	لَّا يَرْأَى مِنْنَا.
They did not care.	لَّا يَرْأَى لَهُمْ.

(See what has been said about the prepositions لَّا and مُّعَجَّلٌ in the Idiom "I prefer," par. 642.)

## I OUGHT.

654. "*I ought*" is translated by the phrase *is cónair* (or *ceárt*) *tom*. You ought, *is cónair* *ónuit*, *is ceárt* *ónuit*. We ought to go home, *Is cónair* *ónáinn* *ónuit* *a báite*. We ought to have gone home, *Is cónair* *ónáinn* *ónuit* *a báite*. As the word "*ought*" has no inflection for the past tense in English, it is necessary to use the *past infinitive in English* to express past time. But as the Irish expression, *is cónair*, has a past tense (*is a cónair*) the *simple verbal noun* is always used in Irish in such expressions.

Ought you not have gone to *Na h-Éireann* *ónuit* *ónuit* *go* *Derry* with them ? *Ósóipe leo ?*

He ought not have gone *Níos ósóipe ósó imteast*.  
away.

### English Dependent Phrases translated by the Verbal Noun.

655. Instead of the usual construction, consisting of a verb in a finite tense followed by its subject (a noun or a pronoun), we very frequently meet in Irish with the following construction. The English finite verb is translated by the Irish verbal noun, and the English subject is placed before the verbal noun. If the subject be a noun it is in the nominative *form*, but if a pronoun in the disjunctive *form*.

The following examples will exemplify the idiom:—

I'd prefer that he should be there rather than myself.

Is it not better for us that these should not be in the boat.

I saw John when he was coming home.

I knew him when I was a boy.

The clock struck just as he was coming in.

Do b'fearrt liom é do veit ann ná mife.

Nac fearrt ómhní gan iad ro do veit iní an mbád.

Connaitc mé Seán agus é ag teáct a baile.

Bi aitne agam aip agus mé im bhuachaill.

Do buail an cloig agus é ag teáct i gteac.

## Idiomatic Expressions.

## CÚIR.

Суйр ортна е. Say it was I did it.  
 Суйримре ортна е. I say it was you did it.  
 Суйр умат (орт). Dress yourself.  
 Суйр ап тарц 50 төрл аир. Thirst annoyed him greatly.  
 Суйрреатра т'ғиасацайт орт I'll make you stop.  
 ртад.  
 Суйр 1ацалл аир е (а) Make him do it.  
 т'еанам.  
 НА Суйр орт 1и 1и суйрреат орт. Don't interfere with me and I will not interfere with you.  
 Суйр ре а 1иан.  
 Суйр ре ртлод орт.  
 Суйр ре 1ре1с (or 1у1ан) орт. } He addressed me.  
 Суйрреат 1о1там а т'еанам. I resolved to do it.  
 ТА Суйр 1иор (т'я1т or 1омп1ад) аир ап 1согод. There is talk about the war.  
 Суйр ре 1у1арод 1а1дац 1а т'еанам. He got a suit of clothes made.  
 Суйр ре 'на 1и1гэ орт. He convinced me of it.  
 Суйр 1 1с1ар 1у1и 1а1г1од1и1р м1ре. Suppose me to be a soldier.  
 Суйр аир 1ун. Established.  
 Суйр (1а1н) ре 1а1о1 , 1 1с1ор1а1с. He settled down in Cork.  
 ТА ре а5 Суйр 'р а5 1у1е1ам. He is debating in his mind.

## TABAIR.

Tabaip ruar.	Surrender.
Tá ré tabairt.	
Tá ré buailte ruar.	He is played out.
Tá ré tugta (tabairt)	He is <i>addicted</i> to that vice.
do'n locht ran.	
Tabaip do óruim leir.	Turn your back to him.
Tugair fé ndeáir(a) an	I noticed the light.
roilair.	
Tá ré tabairt ruar.	He has been given up for dead.
Tug ré ruar.	He gave in.
Tá tabairt ruar aige.	He <i>has given in</i> .
Ír doascairfírinne g éiteac	It is hard to <i>reconcile</i>
do tabairt o'á céile.	truth and falsehood.
Tá tabairt ruar mói aig.	He is <i>highly educated</i> .

## DÉAN.

Déan ruo ari do m átaip.	Obey your mother.
Ni déanfaidh ré ruo oírm.	He would not <i>oblige</i> me.
Nád maic nád ndeáirnair	<i>How well</i> you didn't do it
féin é!	<i>yourself</i> !
Nád maic ná déanann tú	Why don't you obey your
féin ruo ari do m átaip?	mother <i>yourself</i> ?
Nuaip tuisgeantaí a feabhar	When they understood
do óinir (junnir) an	<i>how well</i> you had done
neairt.	the trick.
Déan aige (oo) tabairt	
do o gno féin.	
Déan do gno féin.	Mind your own business.
Tabair aige do o gno féin.	

Teáin na bá do éiríodh Milk the cows.

(Bleasán).

An nteáiríodh an doir? Did you shut the door?  
do dúnadh?

Cá ré ag teáinamh oírláinn. He is coming towards us.

### imcís.

Conur (cionnur) do' imcís How did he *get on* ?  
teir?

Cao do' imcís aibh? {What became of him ?  
Nuaír éinéadann rúdha mar {What happened to him ?  
reo amach. When something like this  
happens.

Cao imteocáir oírm? } What will become of me ?  
(Cneadh éirteocáir doimh?)

### 115.

Dob' é an céad duine do  
buaile uime ná Seagán  
liat.

Ír é rúd doob' feairí teir  
feirfeint nána Saranais  
go téiri o'á nrobhírt ar  
Éirinn.

Ír é rúd do éis aonair éum  
cainte leat mé ná mé  
bheit i gceasadh-cáir.

Ír é rúd do rinne (dein)  
an feair nácaiteamh leo.

The first person he met  
was Seagán liat.

What he wished most to  
see was the banishment  
of the whole of the  
English from Ireland.

What brought me to talk  
with you now is the fact  
that I am in difficulty.

What the man did was to  
throw at them.

Ír é iúd do thain Séamair  
annraint ná i bhrónnadh  
air.

Ír é iúd aitheirteadh gac  
éinne ná gur maité air.

What James did then was  
to make him a present  
of it.

What everyone used to say  
was that it was a great  
blessing for him.

### MÓR.

Ír móir le pád é.

Ír móir le maoiðeath é.

Níor móir le pád é.

Ní móir dom filleadh.

Ní móir dom ghluaigeadh.

Ní móir linn duit.

Ní móir liom dó é.

Ní móir nað (ná go) bhris.

ré déanta.

Ní móir ná go mbeirí ré  
craicneúigé.

Cá móir dom, &c.?

Nað móir a ro' éirig tú!

Ní móir (mó + roe) go  
naðar.

It is *important*.

It is a thing to be proud  
of, or boast about.

It was not of much  
importance.

I *must* return.

I *must* take my departure.

We have no objection to  
your doing so.

I don't *grudge* it to him.

It is *almost* done.

It will be nearly finished.

*Why shouldn't I, &c.?* lit.,  
how is it too much for  
me?

How grand you have got!

It is not *likely* that I shall  
go.

## beag.

1r beag liom é.	I consider it too small.
1r beag oifim é.	I don't like it at all.
1r beag agam é.	I have no great opinion of him.
1r beag an ríseal é.	It's no great harm. He is not to be pitied.
1r beag an cásair tú.	You are not of much use.
1r beag nád fíor agat.	'Tis little you know.
1r beag nád míctiu dó beit ag imteacht.	It is <i>nearly time</i> for him to be going.
Ba beag nád míctiu dó beit ag imteacht.	It was <i>nearly time</i> for him to be going.
1r beag a bhris é.	It is a trifle.
1r beag má tá éinne i n-Éirinn o' fheadraibh é déanam.	<i>There is hardly</i> a person in Ireland who could do it.

## Miscellaneous.

An éiríteocair (ré) linn ?	Shall we succeed ?
Bí ré ag éiríte ghuair.	It was <i>getting</i> cold.
Maití an áit go labhair !	Well said ! or Well done !
Maití mar tárta.	It has happened luckily.
Uisí labhair ré fiú aon focal amháin.	He did not speak a <i>single</i> word.
San fiú na n-anála do tairneann (tarac).	Without <i>even</i> taking breath.
Fiú ari nuaime fein.	<i>Even</i> our own people.

Tá ré ag dul i Ófeasáir.	He is getting better.
Tá ré ag dul i n-olcas.	He is getting worse.
Abaín é!	Hear! hear! Bravo!
Ní cuimín liom a leictéar.	I don't remember <i>the like of it</i> .
O táplá an leabhar agam anoir.	As I <i>happen to have</i> the book now.
Tá ré geall le beit pollam Tá ré pollam nac mó.	It is <i>almost empty</i> .
Ní fhuil dul uaird agat.	You cannot <i>avoid it</i> .
Tá an fear ran ag dul i imbeo oírin.	That man's conduct <i>cuts me to the quick</i> .
Tá ré i miocáit báir. Tá ré le h-uict báir.	He is at <i>the point of death</i> .
Ír millte(aic) an rgeál é.	It is a <i>terrible affair</i> .
Ír caillte an lá é le flice.	It is a <i>terribly wet day</i> .
Sgeal gán dat.	A very <i>unlikely story</i> .
Leig (leog) dom réin leov' cúir cainte.	Don't annoy me with your talk.
Cao é an cúir atá agatra de?	What right (call) have you to it?
An cúir íp luig a de óá uair ra mbliadain.	At least <i>twice a year</i> .
Corr na h-éagsóra.	The <i>essence of wrong</i> .
Le corr tiomáoinir.	Through <i>downright laziness</i> .
Tá rmut de'n ceapt aige.	He is <i>partly right</i> .
Ír leanún an gno túit é.	'Tis an <i>absurd thing</i> for you to do.

Cao 'na caobh ná ceann-  
nuigeanann tú bhróga óuit  
féin? Ían an t-airgead  
do bhéit agam.

Tá ré ari nór cuma liom.  
Cé tá ari ari dtí?  
Tá ré ari do dtí.

Daoine nád mé.  
Ói ceath raoir aige ari óul.  
Ír dual achar do.  
Ói mo túar i n-airgead.  
Cá leigeanann cù a leár.  
Sogaille go.

Béiró rán 'na mairla i 'na  
gut ari a gclú an tá lá  
'r an fáid a béiró grian  
ra rpréir.

Tá ré beagán fuaor.  
Tá ré goinnt bodaor.  
Tá ré gan bhéit ari fógsamh,  
ní fuil an t-uaball ro  
aibid i gceairt.  
Ní cùrrainn gáiridé é.  
Do gáiridá, mura mbeadh  
nád cùir gáiridé é.

Why don't you buy boots  
for yourself? *Because*  
I have not the money.

He is *indifferent*.

Who is *intending us harm*?  
He is bent on attacking  
you. He intends to  
harm you.

Others *besides myself*.

He had *permission to go*.  
He has it from his father.  
My journey was *in vain*.  
You need not.

A fool's errand; a wild  
goose chase.

That will be a reproach  
and a blot on their  
fame the *longest day* the  
sun will be in the sky.

It is a little cold.

He is *somewhat deaf*.

He is a *little unwell*.

This apple is not *quite ripe*.

It is nothing to laugh at.  
You would laugh only  
that it is not a matter  
to laugh at.

Nil cùrraide cainte é. It is nothing to talk about.

Tarraiging cùgat riudéigint eile mar cùrraide magair. Find something else to make fun about.

Cadé an gnó atá agat ve? What do you want it for?

Do baineadh iarracht ve. He was *slightly* startled.  
Seit aif.

Nil fhiul aon gair ag dhéim leir an mballa. There's no use trying to get up on the wall.

Nil raiib aon maitear 'na gileor. In rain did he cry (talk, speak).

Nil móide gur rgnioibh re an litir. Perhaps he did *not* write the letter.

Sabaim iem' air rín do théanamh. I propose to do that.

Tá buidéacair agam oif (fér) } I am *thankful* to you (*for*).  
Táim buidéac óiota (fér) }

Buiríom buidéacair tuit mar gheall (gíoll) aif. } I thank you for it.

Sabaim buidéacair leat mar gheall aif. }

Beró tú téanach (téanáid) ag an traen. You will be late for the train.

Beró tú téanach aif rgní. You will be late for school.

Bi curio aca sá láid go raiib beirte (beirte) aif an mbítealannach. Some of them were saying that the rascal was caught.

Éirpeocair a chroíde aif Óliamhur. It will *break* Dermot's heart.

Seairic riad ar gáilimóib.  
Munab oírt atá an caint!

Luis an caint go léir ar  
an matalong a bí  
imteigte ar Shaóib.

Uisge imteig oírt aict an  
rua a bí tuille teac.

Teip oírlann teact rúar  
leo.

Tá ré ag déanam aitriúir  
ar a caint.

Tá ré ar an bhean ír  
raibhle rúamhain.

Ir docha gur doicí leo.

Tá ré buaile i gceas im  
aigine.

Loingsead iad 'na mbealtaró.

Cao aonáinfead cón ar bith  
aigé?

Bí bheir mór a gceapt  
aca rúasáil.

Bí coiríon fí'n bpránt aca  
rúasáil.

Bí gae uile óine ag  
déanam truaid (truaid)

They burst out *laughing*.  
What talk you have! If  
it isn't you have the  
talk.

The whole conversation  
turned on the misfor-  
tune which *had befallen*  
Sive.

They only got what they  
*had deserved*.

We failed to overtake  
them.

He is *mimicking* his man-  
ner of talking.

He is *the richest man* in  
Munster.

Probably they *imagine*.

I am *firmly convinced*.

They were *burnt alive*.

What will I do at all *with*  
*him*?

They were getting a great  
deal *more than* their  
right.

They were getting five  
shillings *in the pound*.

Everyone was *sympathis-  
ing* with her.

Comhaoirf do Seosán an té ba fine aca.	The eldest of them was the same age as John.
Ba thíos leat aip gur leir an áit.	You (one) would imagine by him that he owned the place.
Ní raibh a chuidíortha ann.	There wasn't a trace of him there.
Comh maist agur dá mba ná raibh éagcónir aip bít ann.	Just as if it were not wrong.
O'fiafhusis ré cao fé ntheár an rult.	He asked <i>what was the cause</i> of the merriment.
Cé'n a mac tú?	Whose son are you ?
Ní mhaistear púinn túit.	You will meet <i>your match</i> .
Cá n'fhor túit?	How did you know ?
A rseal fém rseal gac éinne.	Everyone is most interested in his own affairs.
Tuigf fé ntheár roin.	<i>You are the cause</i> of that.
Tá gno nac é agam.	I have a <i>different matter</i> to look after.
Ní tarife dom fém.	I am <i>no exception</i> ; i.e., I am the same as the others.

### The Autonomous Form of the Irish Verb.

It is sometimes necessary or convenient to express an action without mentioning the subject, either because the latter is too general or not of sufficient importance to be mentioned, or because there is some other reason for suppressing it. Most languages have felt this necessity, and various means have been adopted to supply it. The use of the passive voice, or of reflexive verbs, or of circumlocutions, is the method generally adopted in other languages. In Irish there is a special form of the verb for this purpose. As it has no subject expressed it is sometimes called the **Indefinite** form of the verb: as it forms a complete sentence in itself it is also called the **Autonomous** or **Independent** form.

An English verb cannot stand without its subject. For example, "walks," "walked," etc., express nothing. The English verbs cannot alone make complete sense. The Autonomous form of Irish verbs can stand alone. The word "Buailtear" is a complete sentence. It means that "*the action of striking takes place.*" The Autonomous form stands without a subject; in fact it cannot be united to a subject, because the moment we express a subject the ordinary 3rd person singular form of the particular tense and mood must be substituted. Buailtear an bopó. *Someone (they, people, we, etc.) strikes the table;* but buailteann an fear (ré, riad, na Daoine, etc.) an bopó.

We shall take the sentence: Buailtear an gádair te cloic ó láim Táirbhs. The word "buailtear" of itself conveys a complete statement, viz., that *the action of*

*striking takes place.* The information given by the single word “*buailtear*” is restricted to the action. There are circumstances surrounding that action of which we may wish to give information; *e.g.* “What is the object of the action?” “*An gáthar.*” “What is the instrument used?” “*le cloic.*” “Where did the stone come from?” “*O láim Táinig.*” We may thus fill in any number of circumstances we please, and fit them in their places by means of the proper prepositions, but these circumstances do not change the nature of the fundamental word “*buailtear*.”

It may be objected that the word “*buailtear*” in the last sentence is passive voice, present tense, and means “*is struck,*” and that “*an gáthar*” is the subject of the verb. Granted for a moment that it is passive voice. Now since “*Buailteann duine éigin é,*” *somebody strikes him*, is active voice, as all admit, and by supposition “*buailtear é,*” *somebody strikes him*, or, *he is struck*, is passive, then comes the difficulty, what voice is “*tátar bualte,*” *somebody is struck?* Surely it is the passive of “*buailtear*”; and if so “*buailtear*” itself cannot be passive, though it may be rendered by a passive in English. If we are to be guided merely by the English equivalent, then “*buailteann*” in the above phrase is as much a passive voice as “*buailtear*,” because it can be correctly translated into English by a passive verb: *viz.*, *He is struck.*

When we come to consider this form in intransitive verbs, our position becomes much stronger in favour of the Autonomous verb. Let us consider the following sentence: *Siuibháltar ar an mbótar nuaire bionn*

an bóthar tíortha, aict nuaír bionn an bóthar fliuch, riubaltar aip an gcláirí. *People walk on the road when it is dry, but when the road is wet they walk on the path.* Where is the nominative case of the so called passive verb here? Evidently there is none. The verb stands alone and conveys complete sense. If we wish to express the nominative, the Autonomous form of the verb cannot be used. In the above sentence we might correctly say: Siubhann ré (riao, rinn, na Daoine, etc.), but not riubaltar é (riao, rinn, na Daoine, etc.)

Probably classical scholars will draw analogies from Latin and quote such instances as, *Concurritur ad muros. Ventum est ad Vestae. Sic itur ad astra. Deinde venitur ad portam*; where we have intransitive verbs in an undoubtedly passive construction, and therefore, by analogy, the true signification of riubaltar in the above sentence is "*It is walked*," and it is simply an example of the *impersonal passive construction*. Now, if conclusions of any worth are to be drawn from analogies, the analogies themselves must be complete. The classical form corresponding to the Irish *Úitear ag riubalt aip an mbóthar nuaír bionn an bóthar tíortha*, etc., or *tátar ag riubalt aip an mbóthar anoir* is wanting, and therefore the analogy is incomplete and deductions from it are of little value.

One of the strongest arguments we have in favour of the Autonomous verb is the fact that the verb "to be" in Irish possesses every one of the forms possessed by transitive and intransitive verbs. The analogy with Latin again fails here. *Tátar ag teacht*,

*Somebody is coming.* Θειόφαρ ος τινός, *Somebody will be walking.* Ήναι τικνίς αν τ-ατάς γο πλέσας ος κενσαίτ α σορ, *When the giant perceived that they were binding his legs.*

The Irish Autonomous form cannot be literally translated into English, because no exact counterpart exists in English, hence the usual method of translating this form is to use the English passive voice, but the Irish verb is not therefore passive. To give an instance of the incapability of the English language to express *literally* the force of the Autonomous verb, notice the English translation of the subjoined example of the continued use of the Autonomous verb in an Irish sentence.

“Διτ ανα-αερεας ιφ εαθ λη διτ ριν: ηναι τίτεαρ ος ζαθάιλ αν τρεο ραιν : η-αμ ταιριο να η-οιόσε, αιριζτεαρ σοιριθεαςτ ο'α τέαναιν η ροτζιομ ταρ θειριθε ος ριτ η ροτζιομ ειτε ταρ θειριθε ος τεισεαθ, η ανηραιν αιριζτεαρι ροτζιομ ταρ έιοςφαιρε ρυαρ η ταρ θυαιτιθε η ταρ θειριθε ραοι θυαλαθ η ταρ θηιρριθε, η ανηραιν αιριζτεαρι ταρ θεαθ θελης-ηναταρ η τοιρ.”

This passage cannot be literally translated: the following will give a fair idea of its meaning: “That place is frequented by fairies: when one is walking near it in the dead stillness of the night, footsteps are heard and loud noises, as if people were running and fleeing, and then other noises are heard as if people were overtaking (those who were running away), and were striking and being struck, and as if they were being broken in pieces, and then are heard noises as if they were in hot rout and pursuit.”

The Autonomous form of the verb has a passive voice of its own formed by the addition of the verbal adjective (or past participle) of the verb to the Autonomous forms of the verb *to be*; e.g., *Tátar buailte*, etc.

This form of the Irish verb has a full conjugation through all the moods and tenses, active and passive voices; but has only one form for each tense. All verbs in Irish, with the single exception of the assertive verb *is*, have this form of conjugation. *is* can have no Autonomous form, because *is* has no meaning by itself. It is as meaningless as the sign of equality (=) until the terms are placed one on each side of it.

To sum up then, the Irish Autonomous form is not passive, for—

- (1) All verbs (except *is*), transitive and intransitive, even the verb *tá*, have this form of conjugation.
- (2) This form has a complete passive voice of its own
- (3) The disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are always used with it; e.g., *buailtear é*.
- (4) Very frequently when a personal pronoun is the object of the Autonomous form of the verb, it is placed last in the sentence or clause to which it belongs, thus giving a very close analogy with the construction of the active verb, already explained in par. 535. *Thio, cian doam...gur reolad iscead ran gcoill reo mé...It was not long until I was driven into this wood.* *Do teigearad ó n-a gscréadtaibh iad.* *They were healed of their wounds.*
- (5) Lastly, and the strongest point of all, in the

minds of native Irish speakers, without exception, the word *buailtear* in such sentences as “*buailtear an gáthar*” is *active*, and *gáthar* is its object. Surely those Irish speakers are the best judges of the true shape of their own thoughts.

We will now give a synopsis of the various forms of the Autonomous verb, beginning with the verb *ta*.

### The Verb *Tā*.

tátař.*		is, are.
ni ſuſtear.†		is not, are not.
bitear (bitear).		does be, do be.
ni bitear.		does not be, do not be.
bitear (bitear).		was, were.
ni jaſčar.		was not, were not.
bíti.		used to be.
beirar, beirear, beiro- rpear, běitear.		will be.
beiri(ðe), beirofi(ðe)		would be.
běiti.		
bitear	(Let).	be.
má tátař	(If).	is, are.
má bitear	(If).	does be, do be.
etc.		
má mbeiri	(If).	were, would be.
go jaſčar!	(May).	be (for once).
go mbitear!	(May).	be (generally).
Deiřum go ſuſtear, I say that someone, etc., is.		
Deiřum ná ſuſtear,	„	„ „ „ „ is not.

\* *tåčapf* or *tåča'f*.

† *fuilteorr, fuilteor'.*

## An Intransitive Verb.

Siuḃaltar.		walks, walk.
táċar a᷑s riuḃal.		is (are) walking.
bitear a᷑s riuḃal.		does (do) be walking.
riuḃlaḋ.		walked.
bitear a᷑s riuḃal.		was (were) walking.
riuḃaltaoi.		used to walk.
bíti a᷑s riuḃal.		used to be walking.
riuḃalpár.		will walk.
beipar a᷑s riuḃal.		will be walking.
riuḃalpaoi.		would walk.
beipí a᷑s riuḃal.		would be walking.
riuḃaltar. (Let).		walk.
bitear a᷑s riuḃal (Let).		be walking.
má riuḃaltar. (If).		is (are) walking.
etc.		
ta᷑s riuḃaltaoi. (If).		would be walking.
ta᷑s mbeipí a᷑s riuḃal (If).		were walking.

## A Transitive Verb.

A noun is placed after the active forms in order to show the cases.

Uaċċittein a᷑s cláp.	Someone strikes the table.
Táċar a᷑s buaċlaḋ an cláip.	Someone is striking the table.
Táċar a᷑s buaċlaḋ. The table is being struck.	
Táċar buaċitte.	Someone is struck.
Táċar fe buaċlaḋ.	Someone is being struck.
Bitear a᷑s buaċlaḋ an cláip.	Someone usually strikes the table.
Do buaċleado᷑ an cláp.	Someone struck the table.

Úitear as bualað an cláir. Someone was striking the table.

Úi an cláir tā (gá) bualað. The table was being struck.

Úitear buailte. Someone was struck.

Úitear pé bualað. Someone was being struck.

Buailte an cláir. Someone used to strike the table.

Úiti as bualað an cláir. Someone used to be striking the table.

Úiti buailte. Someone used to be struck.

Buailfar (buailfear) an cláir. Someone will strike the table.

Úeifar as bualað an cláir. Someone will be striking the table.

Úeifar buailte. Someone will be struck.

Buailfi (buailfe) an cláir. Someone would strike the table.

Úeifí as bualað an cláir. Someone would be striking the table.

Úeifí buailte. Someone would be struck.

Buailtear an cláir. Let someone strike the table.

Úitear as bualað an cláir. Let someone be striking the table.

Má buailtear an cláir. If someone strikes the table.

Má úitear as bualað an cláir. If someone does be striking the table.

etc.

Tá mbuailfi an cláir. If someone were to strike the table.

Ó é mbeifí ag buailadh an cláir. If someone were to be striking the table.

Before leaving this important subject it may not be uninteresting to see what some Irish grammarians have thought of the Autonomous form.

O'Donovan in his Irish Grammar (p. 183) wrote as follows :—

“ The passive voice has no synthetic form to denote persons or numbers ; the personal pronouns, therefore, must be always expressed, and placed after the verb ; and, by a strange peculiarity of the language, they are always ‘ *in the accusative form.* ’ ”

“ For this reason some Irish scholars have considered the passive Irish verb to be a **form of the active verb, expressing the action in an indefinite manner** ; as, *buailtear* mé, *i.e.*, *some person or persons, thing or things, strikes or strike me* ; *buaileadh* é, *some person or thing (not specified) struck him*. But it is more convenient in a practical grammar to call this form by the name **passive**, as in other languages, and to assume that *tú*, *é*, *i*, and *tao*, which follow it, are ancient forms of the nominative case.”

Molley says in his Grammar, page 62 :—

“ Verbs have a third form which may be properly called deponent ; as *buailtear* mé, *I am (usually) beaten* ; *buailtear* tú, *thou art (usually) beaten* ; *buailtear* é, *he is (usually) beaten*. The agent of this form of the verb is never known ; but although verbs of this form always govern the objective case, like active verbs, still *they must be rendered in English*

by the passive; as, *buailteadh iad*, *they were beaten*. Here *iad* is quite passive to the action; for it suffers the action which is performed by some unknown agent."

Again at page 99, he says:—

"But there is another form of the verb which always governs an **objective case**; and although it must be translated into the passive voice in English, still it is a deponent, and not a **passive**, form in Irish; as, *buailteap mé*, etc. The grammarians who maintain that this form of the verb takes a nominative case clearly show that they did not speak the language; for no Irish-speaking person would say *buailteap ré*, *ri*, *riad*. It is equally ridiculous to say that *é*, *i*, *iad*, are nominatives in Irish, although they be found so in Scotch Gaelic."

Further on, at page 143, he states again that "deponent verbs *govern an objective case*."

Thus we plainly see that O'Donovan and Molloy bear out the fact that the noun or pronoun after the Autonomous form of the verb is in the **accusative case**, though the former says it is more convenient to assume that it is in the *nominative case*!

# APPENDICES.

## Appendix I.

### NOUNS OF THE FIRST DECLENSION.

áðhán, a song.	carþas, chariot.
áðarþað, a halter.	carþ, heap.
áððar, a cause.	carán, path.
áðmað, wood.	carúð, hammer.
amðan, a fool.	cat, cat.
amðar, a sight.	ceann, head or end.
amðar, doubt.	ceot, music; pl. ceolæ.
aoiðneðr, delight.	cewolongasó,† breakfast.
aoiðeð, manure.	cineál, kind or sort.
aoið, lime.	cleamnæð, marriage alliance.
árián, bread.	cléiþeð, clerk.
áriðán, hillock.	cløg, bell, clock.
árm, an army: pl. árm, ármia.	coðasó, war; pl. coða or coðarðe.
árt, swelling or tumour.	copán, cup.
átað, gladness.	creiðeð, faith, religion.
báð, boat.	cuðan, bay or haven; pl. cuðanæ.
baðán, dummy. (stammerer).	cuðar, foam.
bárr, top.	cúl, back of the head.
báð, death.	
beesgán, a little.	það, beetle.
beasó, food; gen. bít.	veiðeð, end.
beisján, a pin.	viððal, devil.
beiteamnað, rascal.	vinneð, dinner.
blað, taste.	voðað, harm.
bonn, sole, foundation.	voiðeall, grudge, reserve.
bóðar, road; nom. pl. bóiðre.	voðan, earth, world.
briððán, a salmon.	voðað, misfortune.
briðð, joy, pride.	voðar, door; pl. voðræ.
briðð, foal or colt.	voðað, difficulty.
briðð, sorrow.	voðeð, inherited instinct.
briðð, brink; pl. briðða.	
burðeðar, thanks.	earþball, a tail.
bun, bottom.	earþræð, Spring.
caíreal, a stone fortress.	eiðeð, ivy.
caðað, harbour.	eoðar, knowledge.
	euðað, cloth, clothes.

\* This word also means a child's spinning "top."

† In spoken language brieiðfeærtæ, m., is used for "breakfast."

ραργαύ, } shelter.  
ραργαύ, }

ριάč, raven ; pl. ρέιč or ρέιξ.  
ροcal, a word ; pl. ροcal or  
ροcta.

ροζτάρ, Autumn.  
ρον, tune or air.

μυλλάč, top ; pl. μυλλαίγε.

ναού, a saint.  
νεαρτ, strength.  
օсμαρ, hunger.  
δη, gold.

ζαθαρ, goat.  
ζαθαρ, beagle.  
ζαννοαλ, gander.  
ζαηρύн, a young boy.  
ζεαμαρ, green corn.  
ζεάρηсаč, young bird.  
ζλαј, lock.  
ζлóј, voice.  
ζоб, beak (of a bird).  
ζрeаnn, humour.  
ζуаl, coal.

ιαрaнн, iron.  
(F)ιолaр, eagle.  
ιoнaо, place.  
ιрleаn, hollow.

λaоz, calf.  
λaр, middle.  
λeаbаj, a book ; pl. λeаbаj, λeаbаj.  
λeаbаj, booklet.  
λeаtаj, leather.  
λeun, misfortune.  
λion, a net ; pl. λiontа.  
λoн, provision.  
λoпz, a track.

μaoдo or μaoмa, a dog ; pl.  
μaoмaиoе.  
μaзaó, mockery, ridicule.  
μaoj, a steward.  
μaпt, steer or beeve.  
μeаč, failure.  
μilleаn, blame.  
μiонnán, kid.  
μoпpán, much, many.

ρaдgáнаč, a pagan.  
ρaípeuη, paper.  
ρiobáն, windpipe or neck.  
ρoпt, tune or air.  
ρheučán, crow.

μan, track ; gen. μaиn.  
μoó, road.  
μuн, secret.

ρac, a sack.  
ρaзaиt, a priest.  
ρaзaр, kind or sort.  
ρaлaнn, salt.  
ρaнnraó, summer.  
ρaоzаl, life, world.  
ρaoи, craftsman, artisan.  
ρaсtаj, exertion, work.  
ρeаbаc, hawk.  
ρeoн, a precious thing, jewel ;  
pl. ρeoнa.  
ρeуul, news ; pl. ρeуulа ;  
ρeуulа, stories.  
ρlaиnraó, chain ; pl. ρlaиnraóe.  
ρop, wisp.  
ρoпt, } kind or sort  
ρoпo, }  
ρrioиnаo, a spirit.  
ρroи, a spur.  
ρroпt, sport.  
ρtól, treasure store.  
ρuaiмnеaг, repose.

тaмaл, a short space of time.  
сaoиpeаč, a captain, a leader.  
тeаllаč, hearth.  
тpoгzán, furniture.  
тúr, beginning

## Appendix II.

A list of feminine nouns ending in a broad consonant, belonging to the Second Declension.

nom.	gen.	meaning.
anáirc	anáirce	a horn
bábógs	bábóige	a doll
báilrueat	báilruiğe	rain
bárrlaç	bárrlaigé	tow
beac	beice	bee
beann	beinne	a mountain peak
beaplaç	beaplaigé	a heifer
blátaç	bláitce or blátaigé	buttermilk
bor	boíce	palm (of the hand)
bheis	bhéitce	judgment
bheus	bhéige	a lie
bhiaçar	bhéitce	word of honour
bhógs	bhóige	a shoe
bhuiçean	bhuiçne	palace, fort
buióean	buióne	a troop
cailleac	cailliğe	an old woman
cealz	ceitge	deceit.
ceamc	cínce	hen
ceáro	céirroe	a trade
ciall	céille	sense
cian	céine (pl. cianta)	distance
ciamógs	ciamóige	beetle
cíojí	cíje	a comb
cláirreac	cláirriğe	a harp
clann	cloinne or clainne	children
cloé	cloíce	a stone
cluaç	cluairce	an ear
clúim	clúime	plumage
cnead	cneirce	a wound
colpaç	colparige	a heifer
coj	coirge	a foot
craoib	craoibe	a branch
craoirreac	craoiriğe	a spear
cneac	cneice	plunder
cneag	cneiğe	crag
cnioc	cniicé	end
cnot	cnoice	gibbet
cnot	cnoirge	cross
cuaç	cuaicé	cuckoo
cuileog	cuileoirge	a fly

nom.	gen.	meaning.
taibh	taibh	a vat
tealb	tealb	a form
tealb	tealb	a thorn
deoibh	dei	a drink
vion	vine	protection
voineann	voineann	bad weather
dhiead	dhiead	face, visage
earc	earc	a weasel
feacht	feacht	time, occasion
fealig	fealig	anger
feurop	feurop	beard
fitcheall	fitcheall	chess
feast	feast	a feast
fealig	fealig	wreath
feum	feum	a root
fuinneog	fuinneog	window
fuinneog	fuinneog	an ash
fuireog	fuireog	a lark
gabhal	gabhal	a little fork
gaot	gaot	wind
gealac	gealac	moon
geug	geug	branch
gios	gios	squeak
geillread	geillread	girl
gionfraid	gionfraid	
glun	glun	knee
grian	grian	sun
griag	griag	hair
iall	iall	thong
ingeann	ingeann	daughter
lám	lám	hand
lapóig	lapóig	match (light)
laic	laic	mud, mire
leac	leac	a stone flag
leat	leat	half, side
long	long	ship
lúb	lúb	loop
lué	lué	mouse
meup	meup	finger
mué	mué	pig
neamh	neamh	heaven

nom.	gen.	meaning.
δίνηρες	δίνηρις	fool (f.)
οινός	οινοίς	thumb
ριάτ	ρέιρτε	reptile
ριάτός	ριάτρις	worm
ριός	ρίβη	musical pipe
ριούς	ριούς	cheek
ρός	ρόις	kiss
τίμη	τέμιρε	order, regulation
τίλ	τάιλε	heei
τελες	τειλε	hunt
τελης	τειρις	love
τειρηρεας	τειρηρις	plough
τειδες	τειδε	hawthorn bush
τειαν	τεινε	knife
τειανή	τεινή	comeliness
τειατ	τειτο	shield
τειόνιας	τειόνισ	throat
τεινος	τεινε	scrape
τειον	τεινε	weather
τειτ	τειτε	rod
τεινεαν	τεινινε	fine weather
τειελ	τειτε	scythe
τειλαν	τειτε	spark, thunderbolt.
τηρόν	{ τηρόνε τηρόνα	nose
τειοδ	τειοθε	side
τεινο	τεινε	string
τεινη	τεινη	wave
τηρεαδ	τηρειδε	tribe
υδ	υιδε	an egg

### Appendix III.

#### NOUNS BELONGING TO THE THIRD DECLENSION.

- (a) All personal nouns ending in οίη, οίη,
- (b) All abstract nouns ending in άετ.
- (c) Verbal nouns in άετ, άιτ, and άιοαν.
- (d) The following list:—

nom.	genitive.	meaning
άετ	άετα	decree
άιοαν	άιομα	name

nom.	genitive.	meaning.
αιρίσιος	αιρίστε, αιρεστά	repayment, restitution
αλτόριμ	αλτόριμα	altar
ανάλ	ανάλα	breath
ανάμ	ανάμα	soul
αού	αούδα	Hugh
αορ	αορά	folk, people
άτ	άτα	ford
beannáct	beannácta	blessing
baín-piósán	baín-piósána	queen
bioj	beárla	a (cooking) spit
bit (bioj)	beáctá	life
bláit	bláitá	blossom
bliaudain	bliaudóna	a year
bliocht	bleaccta	butter-milk
boé	boéda	tent, cot
buig	buigá	palace, mansion
buacáill	buacalla	boy
buairí	buairá	victory
buairíte	buairídearla	trouble.
caibair	caibra caibraic	help
cáin	cána	tax
Cáirí	Cárga	Easter
cáit	cáta	battle
cion	ceana	love, desire, affection
cíor	cíora	rent
cíte, m. (ciot)	císta	shower
cleair	clearga	a trick
cliadain, m.	cliámná	son-in-law
cnáim	cnáma	bone
coislaó	coisalta	sleep
cóirí	cóbra	justice
conníct	connarla	compact, covenant
coirnáth	coirnta	defence
cráó	cráóna	torture, destruction
críor	críeara	belt
críut	críota	form
cuairt	cuairta (or cuairte)	visit
cuio	cuoda	part, share
váil	vála	account, meeting
ván	vána	destiny
váé	váta	colour
veanamh	veanma	make or shape
Diarmuid	Diarmuid	Dermot
vochtúir	vochtúra	doctor
ófúcht	ófúchta	dew
ófúim, m.	ófúoma	a back

nom.	genitive.	meaning.
éapic	éapica	tax, tribute
éuo	euða	jealousy
euðoð	euðoða	escape, elopement
féat	féata	cause, reason
fealit	fealita	a grave, tomb
fealitainn	fealitanna	rain
fealóm	fealóma	service, use
feol	feola	flesh, meat
fiacail	fiacula	a tooth
fiom	fioma	wine
fior	feora	knowledge
flait	flata	prince
foj	foða	a sudden attack
foðluim	foðlumta	learning
foðrað	foðraða	{ decree
fuasgralð	fuasgralða	{ announcement
fuacð, m.	fuacða	cold
fuarglað	fuarglaðte	ransom, redemption
fuacð	fuacða	hatred
fuil	fola	blood
gleann	gleanna	valley
gnioimh	gnioðma	act, deed
goin	gona	wound
griáð	griáða	love
griem, m.	griemata	a piece
griuð	griða	curds
gul	gol	weeping
gut	gota	a voice
iarrhaid	iarrhaða	a desire, request
iac	iacða	land, country
iomáin	iomána	hurling (a game)
iomháð	iomháðte	report, notice
leabhað, f.	leabha	a bed
leacð	leacða	a grave
lionn	leanna	beer, ale
lior	leora	a fort
loð	loða	lake
loðð	loðða	reproach
lur	lora	an herb
maiðom	maiðma	defeat, rout
maiðeam	maiðte	forgiveness
meað	meaða	esteem

NOM.	GENITIVE.	MEANING.
mián	miána	desire
miL	meala	honey
moð	moða	manner
móin	móna	bog
muíj	maíja	sea
ój	ója	a young person
olann	olna	wool
ollámain	ollámaína	instruction
onóirí	onóra	honour
orglao	orglaithe	admission, opening
peá	peáta	luck
peacé, m.	peacéta	law
peacé	peacéta	a form
peá	peacéta	running
peánsaíl	peánsa	an equal, like
Seán	Seána	November
rgáit	rgáta	shadow
rgoé	rgoéta	flower
reál	reala	a space of time
reac	reaca	frost
riotcán	riotcánna	peace
riuoé	riuoéta	posterity
rmáct, m.	rmácta	a curb
rmáin	rmána	a swim
roj	rojá	pleasure
rraít	rraíca	a layer
rrón	rróna	nose
rruas	rruáca	stream
táilliúrí	táilliúra	tailor
táin	tána	a drove
tionrgam	tionrgama	purpose, project
toil	tola	a will
tráid	trájá	a strand
tréad	tréána	flock, drove
tréoirí	tréoria	guide, troop
tríeurí	tríeuropa	battle
tríorí	tríora	fight, quarrel
Tuam	Tuama	Tuam
tuas	tuasca	tribe
uairí	uairna	cave
uac	uacca	breast

## Appendix IV.

## THE NOUNS OF THE FIFTH DECLENSION.

The letters in brackets give the termination of the genitive singular.

ab or abd, gen. abann, a river; pl. abhne or abhneadha.  
 aontd(-ó), license, permission.  
 Aíla(-n), Isle of Arran; pl. Aílne, The Arran Isles.  
 aia(-n), kidney.  
 beoirí (beoiriac), beer.  
 brága(-v), m., the upper part of the breast.  
 bheirteamh(an), m., a judge.  
 bhló(-n), a quern, handmill; pl. bhlóinte.  
 caora(c), a sheep; pl. caorai.  
 caria(v), a friend; pl. cárroe.  
 caéidh(-éidh), a city, fortress.  
 caéidhri(-réidh), a chair.  
 ceairtosa(-n), a forge, smithy.  
 cealtraomha(-n), a quarter.  
 clair(-rás), a furrow.  
 cónuir(-rheas), a feast.  
 comhurrat(-n), neighbour; pl. comhurrain.  
 comla(-c), a gate, door.  
 comhrad(-n), a coffer, cupboard, coffin.  
 conbón(-naé), a crown.  
 cundi(-naé), a sow.  
 cù, gen. con, a hound; pl. coin, cona, hounds.  
 cùil(-ac), a corner.  
 cuirle(-ann), a pulse, vein.  
 dálleamh(-an), a cup-bearer.  
 daibh(-ac), an oak.  
 deárnas(-n), palm of the hand.  
 díle(-ann), flood, deluge; pl. díleanna, díleanaéa.  
 ealaóda(-n), science, learning.  
 earaonta(-ó), disagreement, disobedience.  
 earrá (compound of cù), an eel.  
 eiríri(-rheas), an oyster.  
 eoéidh (eoéris), a key.  
 eorna(-n) [or gen. same as nom.], barley.

fealram(-an), m., philosopher.  
 feicéamh(an), m., debtor.  
 feoirí(-ac), The Nore.  
 fiosáin(ac), a sign, mark.  
 fíche(av), twenty.  
 fóghair(ghlaé), plunder.  
 gába(-n), m., a smith; pl. gábhne.  
 ghráin (ghránaé), hatred.  
 gualat(-n), a shoulder; pl. gualne, gualleaca.  
 iongá(-n), a nail (of the finger); pl. ingne.  
 laéa(-n), a duck.  
 láir (láraé), a mare.  
 lánamha(-n), a married couple.  
 lárain (lárraé), a flame.  
 láttair (láttiaé), a level plain.  
 leaca(-n), m., a cheek; pl. leacaineaca.  
 luigé(-n), the shin; pl. luigne.  
 mainirtír(-tireas), a monastery.  
 meanma(-n), the mind.  
 mísle(-as), a soldier, warrior.  
 náin(a(-v)), an enemy; pl. náinthe.  
 noolais (noolag), Christmas.  
 ollamh(-an), a doctor, professor.  
 peairra(-n), a person.  
 maighair (maigheas), a rule.  
 noigha(-n), a choice; pl. noighneaca, noighaineaca.  
 rail (rálac), a beam.  
 reanngá(-n), a cormorant.  
 rtail (rtálaé), a stallion.  
 tál(-ac), a wedge.  
 talamh, gen. talman, land.  
 Téarnáir (Tearnaíac) Tara.  
 teanngá(-n or ó), tongue; pl. teanngá.  
 teorfa(-n), boundary, limit.  
 uille(-ann), an elbow.  
 ulca(-n), a beard.  
 uirra(-n), a door-jamb.

## Appendix V

## A LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBAL NOUNS.

VERB	MEANING.	VERBAL NOUN
abair	say	fiád
anomáist	confess	anomáist
bain	snatch, take*	baint
beir	bear, carry	bheir
bliúd	milk	bliúdáin
bhrúid	cook	bhrúid
buain	reap,	buaint
caill	lose	cailleáin
cait	throw, open, consume	caitseam, caitsead
ceannas	buy	ceannac
ceil	conceal	ceilt
céim	step	céim
cinn	determine	cinneadáin
claoi	defeat	claoi
coimead	watch, guard	coimead
coiríod	bless	{coiríeagan coiríeagán
coirí	prevent	coirí
comhráid	fight	comhráid
coisair	whisper	coisair
congair	keep	congáil
coiríus	stir, move	coiríusé
coiríon	defend	coiríon, coiríont
círeáid	believe	círeáid
cuir	put, send	cuir
dearmad	forget	dearmad
diol	sell	diol
dhúint	shut (M. move towards)	dhúint
dúiríod	awake	dúiríod, dúrgaod
éag	die	éag
éileád	claim	éileamh, éileágán
éiríod	rise, arise	éiríod
éirt	listen	éirtead
fág	find, get	fágáil
fág	leave	fágáil
fán	wait	fánamaint

\* To take a thing not offered is "bain;" but when offered, "glaed."

VERB.	MEANING.	VERBAL NOUN.
far	grow	far
fead	whistle	feadgáil
feam	pour out, shower	feamáin
feic	see	feicint
feud	behold, look	feudaint
fiabhluit	ask, enquire	fiabhluit
foeglum	learn	foeglum
foill	suit, fit	foilleamáint
frith	help, succour	frithint
freasraíl	attend, serve	freasraíl
fuas	sew	fuasgáil
fuasair (fógsair)	announce, proclaim	{ fuasgáilt, fógsra
fulaing	suffer	fúlang
gab	take, go	gabáil
gáim	call, shout	gáim
geall	promise	geallamain
géim	bellow, low	géimneac or géimeadó
glaos	call	glaosáac
glauir	journey, go	glaupasct
goil	weep	goil
guir	pray	guiré
íarri	try, ask, entreat	íarriat
impear	contend, wrestle	impeargáil
imteig	go away	imteadct
innir	tell	innint
iomcáir	carry	iomcáir
iompuis	turn	iomróid
foc	pay	foc
ionat	wash	ionat
ionnuis	approach	ionnuis
ít	eat	ít
leag	knock down	leagan
lean	follow	leanamaint
léig	let, allow	léigean
ling	leap	ling
lomair	strip, pull off	lomairt, lompiadó
luig	lie (down)	luigé
mairi	live, exist	{ maipearctain
mais	forgive	maisctain
mear	think	mear

VERB	MEANING.	VERBAL NOUN.
oīl	nourish	oileamaint
ól	drink*	ól
neic	sell	neic
néicteig	arrange	néicteac
ninn	dance	ninnce
nit	run	nit
nioinn	divide	nioinn
raoīl	think	raoīlin
reas	stand	reasam
reinn	play (an instrument)	reinnm
rsáil	separate	rsáilmaint
rsáilor	destroy, erase	rsáilor
rsáilri	cease	rsáilri
rsiudal	walk	rsiudal
rláo	slay	rláo
rnáim	swim	rnáim
rtas	stop	rtas
ruiró	sit	ruiróe
taibair	give	taibairt
tairg	offer	tairgri
tairgairis	draw	tairgairis
teagair	teach, instruct	teagair
teilg	fling	teilgean
toémar	wind	toémar
tós	lift	tósáil tósaint
tóirig	search for, pursue	tóirigseac
tréig	forsaken, abandon	tréigean
tuig	understand	tuigint, tuirgint
tuill	earn, deserve	{tuilleam
tuirgling	alight, descend	{tuilleamain tuirgling

## Appendix VI.

### A LIST OF VERBS BELONGING TO FIRST CONJUGATION.

bac, stop, hinder, meddle.  
baín, snatch, take.  
báit, drown.  
béic, bawl.  
bog, soften.

bliéig, milk.  
briur, break.  
briúig, bruise.  
buail, beat.  
buairó, give success.

\* Drunk, meaning intoxicated, is not órtas, but " *an meirge*."

caill, lose.  
 caoin, lament.  
 caic, waste, spend, eat or cast.  
 cam, bend, make crooked.  
 can, sing.  
 caoc, blind.  
 car, twist, turn, wind, wry.  
 ceap, think.  
 ceao, allow, leave, permit.  
 ceit, hide, conceal.  
 cinn, resolve.  
 ciom, comb.  
 claois, defeat.  
 claois, bend, crook.  
 coir, stop, hinder.  
 craic, shake.  
 cnoic, hang.  
 creia, believe, trust.  
 cruit, tremble, quake.  
 crom, bend stoop.  
 crom ari, set about.  
 cum, form; shape.  
 cuim, put, send.  
 cuim ari bun, establish.  
 cuim caoi ari, mend.

daom, condemn, blame.  
 deairb, ascertain, assure.  
 deairic, look, observe, remark.  
 deairmid, forget.  
 ding, press, stuff, push.  
 diol, sell.  
 doir, burn, consume.  
 doirit, spill, shed.  
 doimio, shut, move.  
 doal, plait, fold.  
 dun, close

éirt, listen.

faip, watch, guard.  
 fáir, squeeze, crush.  
 fan, stay, wait, stop.  
 fár, grow.  
 feao, whistle.  
 feall, deceive, cheat.  
 feann, flay, strip.  
 feap, pour out, shower.  
 feuc, behold, look.

fill, return, come back.  
 feuðam. I can.  
 fluic, wet, moisten, drench.  
 foill, suit, fit.  
 fóip, help, relieve, succour.  
 fóglum, learn.

gáir, shout, call.  
 geall, promise.  
 geappi, cut.  
 géill, obey, submit.  
 glac, take, reserve.  
 glan, cleanse.  
 glaois, call.  
 gluair, journey, travel, go.  
 gois, steal.  
 goil, weep, lament.  
 goin, wound.  
 gnaif, sign, mark.  
 guris, pray.

iappi, ask, seek, request, be  
 seech.  
 ioc, pay, atone.  
 it, eat

leip, light, kindle, blaze.  
 leis, throw down.  
 lean, follow, pursue.  
 leis, read.  
 leis, grant, suffer, permit.  
 leim, leap.  
 ling, leap, bounce, start.  
 lion, fill, surfeit, cram.  
 loir, singe, scorch, burn.  
 lub, bend, crook.  
 luis, lie.

maip, last, exist, remain.  
 maip, kill, murder.  
 mai, forgive.  
 maot, wet, steep.  
 meall, deceive, defraud.  
 meaf, estimate, think.  
 meac, fade, wither.  
 mil, spoil, destroy.  
 mol, praise.  
 müin, teach, instruct.

nearȝ, tie, join.	reol, teach, drive, sail.
niȝ, wash.	reinn, play (music).
oīl, nurse, cherish.	reȝan, separate, divide.
oīr, suit, fit.	reȝiioð, write.
ól, drink.	reȝiop, sweep, scrape, destroy.
pléaȝ, crack.	reil, drop, let fall, sink.
póȝ, kiss.	rein, stretch, extend.
polȝ, pierce, penetrate.	remero, beckon, wink.
pneab, spring, leap.	reus, swallow.
reic, sell.	reám, swim, float.
reub, tear, burst.	reau, stop.
reȝ, run, flee.	recau ve, dent.
reinn, divide.	recau, sit.
reaiȝ, pursue, rout.	
ráit, thrust, stab.	reaiȝ, offer.
raoiȝ, ril, reflect, think.	reacȝ, choke.
raor, deliver.	reaiȝ, flee.
raoisiȝ, loose, let go.	reȝ, choose, select.
reusir, cease, desist.	reȝ, take up, lift.
reȝar, stand.	reȝead, plough, till.
reio, blow.	reȝeis, forsake, abandon.
	reȝoio, fight, quarrel.
	reȝiȝ, understand.
	reuiȝ, earn, deserve.
	reuiȝ, fall.

## Appendix VII.

### LIST OF SYNCOPATED VERBS.

æȝaiȝ, entreat (avenge).	eiȝiȝ, fly.
aiȝin, recognize.	
baȝaiȝ, threaten.	reȝdaiȝ, serve.
ceȝdaiȝ, answer.	reȝeadaiȝ, attend, serve.
ceȝdaiȝ, bind.	(F)orȝaiȝ, open.
ciȝiȝ, tickle.	reȝaȝaiȝ, proclaim.
coȝiȝ, spare.	reȝaȝiȝ, suffer.
coȝaiȝ, sleep.	reȝaȝaiȝ, relieve.
coȝaiȝ, defend.	
cuȝmiȝ, rub.	
diȝiȝ, tell.	
diȝiȝ, graze.	
imȝiȝ, play.	
iomcðaiȝ, carry.	
ioððaiȝ, offer.	
viȝiȝ, banish.	

ւաճար, speak.	տօմար, consume, eat.
լոմար, strip, bare.	տօճար, root.
մնյալ, awaken.	դարձանց, draw.
բաշար, trample.	տնօնու, gather.
բաշան, avoid.	տօքար, wind.
	դարձնենց, descend.

## Appendix VIII.

### ENDINGS OF THE REGULAR VERBS IN PRESENT-DAY USAGE.

#### Broad Terminations.

##### Imperative.

SING.	PLU.	SING.	PLU.
1. —	{-ամաօիր (-ամսոր). -ամ.	1. —	{-իմիր (-եամսոր). -եամ.
2. [root]	-արօ	2. [root]	-րօ.
3. -արօ.	-արօիր, -առաօօր.	3. -եարօ.	-րօիր.

##### Present Tense.

1. -ամ.	-ամաօօր, -ամսոր.	1. -իմ.	-իմիօ (-իմրօ).
2. -արի.	-առն րին.	2. -իլ.	-եառն րին.
3. -առն.	-արօ.	3. -եառն.	-րօ.

##### Imperfect.

1. -առն.	-ամաօօր (-ամսոր).	1. -ինն.	-իմիր (-իմրօ).
2. -տά.	-արօ րին.	2. -թեա.	-եաթ րին.
3. -արօ.	-արօիր (-առաօօր).	3. -եարօ.	-րօիր.

##### Past.

1. -ար.	-ամարի.	1. -եար.	-եամար.
2. -ար.	-անձար.	2. -րի.	-եանձար.
3. [no ending]	-առար.	3. [no ending]	-եառար.

##### Future.

1. -բաօ.	-բամաօօր (-բամսոր)	1. -բեար.	-բիմիօ (-բիմրօ).
2. -բարի.	-բարօ րին.	2. -բիլ.	-բիթ րին.
3. -բարօ.	-բարօ.	3. -բիրօ.	-բիրօ.

##### Conditional.

1. -բանն.	-բամաօօր (-բամսոր).	1. -բինն.	-բիմիր (-բիմրօ).
2. -բա.	-բարօ րին.	2. -բեա.	-բեաթ րին.
3. -բաթ.	-բարօիր (-բառաօօր).	3. -բեաթ.	-բիթիր.

## Appendix IX.

## EARLY MODERN FORMS OF THE VERBS.

## 1S.

We give only those forms which have not already been given in the body of the Grammar.

**Dependent Present:** -μιαβ ; (as in γυμιαβ, *that it is*, ναμιαβ, *to which or whom it is* ; μναβ, *if it is not*).

**Obsolete Dependent Present:** -αδ ; (as in γοναδό, *that it is*, ναναδό, *to which or whom it is*). This form occurs frequently in early modern writers. A remnant of it is found in the word γιοδό or γιό, *though it is*.

**Past:** πα.

The form πα of the past though frequently found in early modern writers is now obsolete.

**Dependent Past:** -μι θα (sometimes written -μι θο), as in γυμι θα, *that it was* ; ναμι θα, *to whom or which it was* ; μναμι θα, *if it was not* ; αμι θα, *was it?* νιομι θα, *it was not*.

The full form of the Dependent Past, though sometimes found in early modern writers is now contracted to -μιδ' before vowels, and to -μι before consonants.

**Subjunctive:** Τάμαδό (νά μβαδό), *if it were* ; γέμαδό (γέ μβαδό), *though it were*.

## τά.

## Imperative.

1. —	bínníp, bíom.
2. bí.	bíδό, bíδιό.
3. bíouύ	bíδíp.

## Present Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

1. ατάιμ	ατάμαοιο.	ρυιλιμ	ρυιλιμίο.
2. αταοι	ατάχαοι.	ρυιλε (-ιμ)	ρυιλτί.
3. ατά	ατάιο.	ρυιλ	ρυιλιυ.

## DEPENDENT.

## Habitual Present.

1. bím	bímiό.
2. bíη	bíti.
3. bí(ό)	bíο.

## Past Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

1. θάδαρ	θάμαρι.	ραθαρ	ραθαμαρ
2. θάδαιρ	θάθαρι.	ραθαιρ	ραθαθαιρ.
3. θι	θάναρ	ραθε	ραθαναρ.

## DEPENDENT.

## Future Tense.

1. ბიათ ბიამაით, ბიამ.
2. ბიარ ბიატაი.
3. ბიაიტ, ბია ბიაი.

Relative: ბიარ.

## Conditional—Secondary Future.

1. ბეინ ბეიმი.
2. ბეიტეა ბიატ ტ. ბ.
3. ბიატ, ბეიტ ბეიტი.

## Subjunctive Mood.

## Present Tense.

1. უანდა უანდაით, უანდამ.
2. უანდარ უანდაი.
3. უანდე უანდაი.

## ENDINGS OF THE REGULAR VERBS IN EARLY MODERN IRISH.

The following is a table showing the various endings of the regular verbs in Early Modern Irish. It is not intended that these forms should be learned by the student; they are given merely for reference:—

## Broad Terminations. ♦

## Imperative.

SING.	PLU.
1. —	-ამ.
2. [root]	-აიტ.
3. -ატ.	-(ა)უაიოი.

## Present Tense.

1. -აიმ.
2. -აიუ.
3. -აიტ.

	-(ა)მაით.
1.	-აიმ.
2.	-აიუ.
3.	-აიტ.

## Imperfect

1. -აინ.
2. -ტა.
3. -ატ.

	-(ა)მაირ.
1.	-აინ.
2.	-ტა.
3.	-(ა)უაირ.

## Past.

1. -არ.
2. -აირ.
3. (no ending)

	-ამარ.
1.	-არ.
2.	-აირ.
3.	-აუარ.

## Slender Terminations.

## Imperative.

SING.	PLU.
1. —	-ეამ.
2. [root]	-იტ.
3. -ეატ.	-(1)უირ.

## Present Tense.

1. -იმ.
2. -იუ.
3. -იტ.

	-(1)მიტ.
1.	-იმ.
2.	-იუ.
3.	-იტ.

## Imperfect.

1. -ინ.
2. -ტეა.
3. -ეატ.

	-(1)მირ.
1.	-ინ.
2.	-ტეა.
3.	-ეატ.

## Past.

1. -ეარ.
2. -ირ.
3. (no ending)

	-ეამარ.
1.	-ეარ.
2.	-ირ.
3.	-ეაუარ.

## Future.

1. -ράσ. -ράσ (άσιο)
2. -ράιη. -ράσι.
3. -ράιό. -ράσιο.

## Future.

1. -ρέσ. -ρέσ (ριμίο).
2. -ρίη. -ρί.
3. -ρίό. -ρίο.

## Conditional.

1. -ράιη. -ράιησιρ.
2. -ρά. -ράσι.
3. -ράσ. -ράιησιρ.

## Conditional.

1. -ρίη. -ρίμιρ.
2. -ρέ. -ρί.
3. -ρέσ. -ρίσιρ.

## Irregular Verbs.

It is principally in the future tense that the inflexions of the irregular verbs in Early Modern Usage differ from the forms now generally used.

## Future Tense.

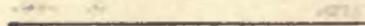
1. (no termination) αμ (-μασιο).
2. αιη τασι.
3. α αιο.

The following verbs took no inflexion in the 3rd person singular of the present time. The forms in brackets are the dependent forms:—

Θο-θει (ταθει), θει (θαθει), θο-ζειθ (ραζειθ, ραζθαν), θο-ζη, θο-ζι (ραζι), (θειη), τιζ, τειο.

The following had no inflexion in the 1st person singular past tense:—

Αθυθαρτ, (θυθαρτ), ατζοννας (ρασα) τάνας, ευαλα, μάνας.



# INDEX.

---

The numbers refer to the paragraphs.

Δ, voc. part., 21d.  
Δ, poss. adj., 522.  
Δ, rel., 26e, 233, &c., 546, 554.  
Δ, part., 169.  
Δ, prep., 605(2).  
Δβ, 339,  
ΔβΔ, 119.  
ΔβΔιη, 35c, 355.  
Δβησιμ, 357.  
Δβητ, 436.  
-ΔC, 467a.  
ΔCτ 50, 550.  
Δθειημ, 357.  
Δντυλιό, 441.  
Δνυδαιητ, 359.  
Δγ, 191, 217, 617.  
Δγά, 544.  
Δγαιό, 86, 89.  
Δγομ, 191.  
Δγυτ, 154, 628(2).  
Διcίo, 88.  
Διχτe, 86.  
Διλne, 10, 43d.  
Διρne, 166.  
ΔιτθεοcΔo, 297.  
ΔιngeaL, 65.  
Διnη, 43(4), 104.  
Διτ, 14, 84, 530 (note).  
Διβa, 129, 473(2).  
Διuinn, 35b, 144.  
Δm, 104.  
Δm (Δm), prefix, 455.  
Δm, Δmαc, 433.  
Δmac, 433.  
-Δmail, 467c.  
Δmāin, 172.  
Δmáiac, 434.  
Δmēac, 433.  
Δmuic, 433.  
Δmuic, 433.  
Δn, intens part., 161.  
Δn, def. art., 39, 40, 470, &c.

Δn, interrog. part., 26e.  
Δnall, 438.  
Δnam, 104.  
Δn-Δuio, 198.  
ΔnθeΔr, 441.  
Δnθiu, 434.  
Δnιap, 441.  
Δnior, 436.  
Δnn, 39, 604, 627.  
Δnnra, 166.  
ΔnoCt, 434.  
Δnoiη, 441.  
Δnonn, 438.  
Δnuar, 436.  
Δoιbinn, 35b, 144.  
ΔoιbneΔr, 131.  
Δoime, 447.  
Δoip'ne, 64.  
ΔoipneΔc, 64, 241.  
Δoipne, 166.  
Δon, numer., 172, 505, 509.  
Δon, indef. adj., 197, 200.  
ΔonaC, 58.  
Δonaη, 177.  
Δonmāo, 173, 504.  
Δη, poss. adj., 14, 26a, 522.  
Δη, pron., 237.  
Δη, interrog., 278.  
Δη, prep., 219, 578, 618.  
Δη, verb, 423.  
Δη bēt, 197.  
Δη feadō, 613d.  
Δηro, 166.  
Δηroān, 42d.  
Δηroic, 297, 315d.  
Δpēiη, 434.  
Δpim, 69.  
Δpηr, 423.  
Δr, 225, 919.  
Δr, 154.  
Δcαιη, 43(3), 132.  
Δtēim, 390.

ხა (bó), 132.  
 ხა (verb), 158, 334, 338, 340, 341.  
 ხავის, 42c, 100.  
 ხასე, 113.  
 ხასის, 293.  
 ხან, 165.  
 ხარ, 14.  
 ხარ, 14.  
 ხახ, 79.  
 ხაჯ, 166.  
 ხაჯან, 198, 241.  
 ხალახ, 58.  
 ხალ, 132.  
 ხალ, 326.  
 ხალა, 131.  
 ხერხეამ, 326.  
 ხერქი, 327.  
 ხემ, 87.  
 ხემ, 342, 618(7c).  
 ხელმ, 347, 6:8(7b).  
 ხელ, 177, 481.  
 ხელ, 327, 330.  
 ხერხეამ, 326.  
 ხერქი, 327.  
 ხერხე, 284.  
 ხეო, 148.  
 ხალბ, 64.  
 ხიორ, 322.  
 ხიხამ, 319, 322, 329.  
 ხიხამ, 324.  
 ხიხი, 323.  
 ხლახხე, 86.  
 ხლახახ, 86.  
 ხო, 132.  
 ხოჯამ, 65.  
 ხყაონ, 199.  
 ხყათ, 163.  
 ხყახამ, 132.  
 ხყეაჯ, 166.  
 ხყиан, 64.  
 ხყერხეამ, 42b, 131.  
 ხყианახ, 486.  
 ხყиახამ, 86, 131.  
 ხყინ, 649.  
 ხყиახ, 56, 66.  
 ხყиүнәән, 35a, 85.  
 ხყүнис, 31ab.  
 ხүадаил, 43(3), 105.  
 ხүалб, 43(4).  
 ხүал, 261, &c

ხүалтәән, 251.  
 ხүаләб, 189.  
 ხүиүәән, 35a, 85.  
 ხүин (bó), 132.  
 ხүп, 26a, 522.  
 ხа, 26e, 278.  
 ხа, 202.  
 ხа, 600.  
 ხадаим, 35a.  
 ხад, 241.  
 ხад, 243.  
 ხад на ხаоб, 435.  
 ხад ҳүнгэ, 435.  
 ხад ғат, 435.  
 ҳаде, 243.  
 ҳалин, 43e, 111.  
 ҳаил, 31fc.  
 ҳаилеаҳ, 77.  
 ҳам, 105, 131.  
 ҳайре, 121.  
 ҳаиҳ, 316a.  
 ҳан, 600.  
 ҳади, 114.  
 ҳадон, 315b.  
 ҳади, 66.  
 ҳадиа, 125.  
 ҳади, 37, 69.  
 ҳади, 278.  
 ҳади, 600.  
 ҳади, 121.  
 ҳадиаиз, 35a.  
 ҳадион, 433.  
 ҳадион, 433, 435.  
 ҳадиим, 35a.  
 Ҳадаим, 115.  
 ҳадаим, 126.  
 ҳад, 243, 435.  
 ҳадетаим, 242.  
 ҳади, 11.  
 ҳади, 14, 67, 175, 511.  
 ҳади (first), 167, 505.  
 ҳадон, 200b, 513.  
 ҳадоннаҳ, 293.  
 ҳадоннис, 293.  
 ҳадр, 67.  
 ҳадиц, 4'a, 78.  
 ҳадиц, 64, 654.  
 ҳадетаим, 171.  
 ҳадетаим, 177, 481.

céile, 246.  
 céim, 87.  
 céití, 508.  
 ceo, 132.  
 ceoċa (ceo), 132.  
 ceoðana (ceo), 132.  
 ceol, 8, 67.  
 ceoñ, 167, 505.  
 Ceoñðoñ, 447.  
 ceuñ, 243.  
 cia, 202, 243, 245.  
 ciāc (ceo), 132.  
 ciā meoñ, 202.  
 cié, 237.  
 cím, 389.  
 ciinn, 513.  
 cioca, 243, 435.  
 cionnur, 435, 557.  
 cié, 104.  
 ciúṁair, 88.  
 clann, 86.  
 cláir, 68.  
 clear, 104.  
 cliamain, 105.  
 coicteónir, 88.  
 cloinne, 86.  
 clop, 398.  
 cnáṁ (cnáim), 96.  
 cneair, 64, 66.  
 cnoc, 63.  
 coval, 35c.  
 covaló, 10.  
 coȝasó, 67.  
 coȝil, 302, &c.  
 coȝilt, 313.  
 coileac, 59.  
 coill, 89, 131.  
 coimlón, 32 (note).  
 coin, 119.  
 cónir, 14, 145, 654.  
 coif, 316b.  
 coifte, 14.  
 com, 154.  
 comnusigte, 565.  
 cómra, 131.  
 comuñðain, 119.  
 conañ, 435.  
 connac, 392.  
 Connac̄a, 130.  
 connac̄, 392.

conniað, 105.  
 conur, 435.  
 conóin, 131.  
 con, 76.  
 conðin, 315c.  
 cota, 110.  
 cnié, 132.  
 cniro, 316c.  
 cniéiðana (cnié), 132.  
 cniuñfead, 280.  
 cniuñ, 243.  
 cniuñ (cnié), 132.  
 cnior, 98.  
 cniuñe, 114.  
 cniuñac, 131.  
 cuac, 131.  
 cuatçar, 411.  
 cuaið, 411.  
 cuala, 398.  
 cuatçar, 398.  
 cuan, 67.  
 cuoñ, 105, 198, 241, 524, &c.  
 cùñ, 508.  
 cùñgead, 177, 481.  
 cùile, 242.  
 cùinne, 113.  
 cuir, 316b.  
 cuirum, 618(8).  
 cuir, 87.  
 cuirle, 124.  
 cum, 223, 620.  
 cun, 603.

Óá, *numeral*, 514, &c.  
 óá (oo+a), 544.  
 óá, *conj.*, 26e, 552.  
 -óá, 467d  
 Óaðac, 86.  
 Óaðcē, 86.  
 Óaile, 43d.  
 Óála, 603.  
 Óalta, 603.  
 Óaði, 114.  
 Óaðine, 114.  
 Óaði, 424.  
 Óáji, 278.  
 Óaðia, 508.  
 Óaðið, 542.  
 Óaðiðoñ, 447.  
 Óaðiðas, 177, 481.

νατ̄, 104.  
 Τέ (Θιδ), 132.  
 νε, 163, 227, 606(1), 621.  
 νεασαιρ, 145.  
 νεασαιρ, 411.  
 νεασ̄, 493, 494(2).  
 νεασαιρ, 411.  
 νέαν, 316e.  
 νεαρημάταιρ, 132.  
 νειηθρίαιρ, 132.  
 νειηθρίάρ, 132.  
 νεαης, 387.  
 νεάηηαρ, 279, 381.  
 νεῑ, 507.  
 νεῑ, 87.  
 νεῑ, 381.  
 νεῑснеа̄д̄а̄р, 177.  
 νεῑӣм, 357.  
 νεӣснеа̄р, 442.  
 νео̄с, 86.  
 νео̄ӣ, 66, 200.  
 νеӣн, 377.  
 Θιδ (God), 132.  
 Θιд (day), 448.  
 Θиа̄р, 177, 481.  
 Θибедиа̄т, 314.  
 Θибӣр, 315a.  
 Θи́з̄е, 86.  
 Θи́леа̄р, 141.  
 Θи́меа̄с, 139.  
 Θиа̄о̄, 114.  
 Θо́, numeral, 14, 171.  
 Θо́, poss. adj., 182, 521.  
 Θо́, prefix, 287, 455.  
 Θо́, before past tense, 276.  
 Θо́, prep. 188, 220, 606(1), 622.  
 Θо́бай̄р, 427.  
 Θ'рóбай̄р, 427.  
 Θо̄б, 336.  
 Θо́ӣж̄, 315b.  
 Θоӣӣн, 199a.  
 Θоӣа̄, 415.  
 Θоӣна̄с, 447.  
 Θоӣнáн, 199a.  
 Θоӣӣр, 65.  
 Θо́хай̄р, 198.  
 Θоӣӣс, 114.  
 Θоӣс, 493, 494(2).  
 Θоӣӣм, 43(4), 101.  
 Θиа̄ӣӣ, 419.  
 θиа̄ӣр, 87.  
 θибдaiт, 359.  
 θибдaiтaр, 359.  
 θиӣе, 114.  
 θиi, 415.  
 θиiта, 415.  
 θиӣ, 67, 315a.  
 є, 211, 535.  
 єа̄с, 70.  
 єа̄чиа̄о̄, 70.  
 єа̄о̄, 213.  
 єа̄утио̄а̄р, 462.  
 єа̄з̄, 646.  
 єа̄з̄чио̄еа̄р, 462.  
 єа̄з̄ла̄, 649.  
 єа̄н, 61.  
 єа̄нла̄ӣ, 70.  
 єа̄нна̄, 114.  
 єӣз̄еа̄р, 65.  
 єӣз̄ӣ(т), 197.  
 єӣлe, 197.  
 єӣнiн, 32, note.  
 єӣнne, 64, 241.  
 єӣӣе, 127, 473(2).  
 єо̄, 238.  
 єоӣна̄, 131.  
 єуӣа̄с, 58.  
 єун, 61.  
 ёá, 190, 228, 623.  
 ёаса̄, 279, 392.  
 ёа̄тa, 376.  
 ёа̄тaр, 370.  
 ёа̄тaр, 392.  
 ёа̄тo, 63.  
 ёа̄тa, 166.  
 ёа̄з̄, 316f.  
 ёа̄з̄, 31 f, 368.  
 ёа̄з̄а̄тo, 250.  
 ёа̄ӣ, 388.  
 ёа̄ӣтi, 371.  
 ёӣ, 14, 316a.  
 ёӣ, 190, 228, 623.  
 ёӣ, 290, 316a.  
 ёа̄с, 387.  
 ёа̄са̄, 392.  
 ёа̄тo, 316f.  
 ёа̄тaтi, 428.  
 ёа̄тaтi, 425.

φεαναρ, 425.  
 φεανηματαρ, 425.  
 φεαρ, 62, 69.  
 φεαρ, 14, 62.  
 φεαρματιλ, 147  
 φεαρη, 11, 166.  
 φειс, 386.  
 φειс, 66.  
 φειсеаm, 131.  
 φεисреаnа, 396.  
 φеiг, 66.  
 φеiге, 106.  
 φеiп, 206.  
 φеiр, 87.  
 φеiрсiпt, 396.  
 φеiт, 316e.  
 φеoиl, 99.  
 φiаe, 66.  
 φiаe, 175, 511.  
 φiаeаn, 168.  
 φiаn, 14, 97.  
 φiаn, 161.  
 φiиn, 32 (note).  
 φiиn, 433, 642.  
 φiаiсeаmаiл, 35b.  
 φocal, 66.  
 φoclóиl, 43(4).  
 φóиl, 259.  
 φóиlиcиn, 259.  
 φoзuр, 16.  
 φoзgрe, 166.  
 φoг, 14.  
 φpеuиn, 83.  
 φpиg, 132.  
 φpиgоe, 132.  
 φpиt, 372.  
 φuаcт, 94.  
 φuаgаиl, 301.  
 φuаgиlа, 313.  
 φuаiм 87, 90.  
 φuаiр, 279.  
 φuаrтaр, 372.  
 φuиe, 166.  
 φuиteаr, 321.  
 φuлáиl, 644.  
 φuиuр, 166.  
 φuиa, 166.  
  
 Гa, 132.  
 Гá, 544.

Гaб, 316f, 364.  
 Гaбa, 122.  
 Гaбál, 290.  
 Гaбraп, 367.  
 Гaс, 201  
 Гaс aon, 242.  
 Гaс pe, 201.  
 Гaс uile, 241.  
 Гaсe (Гa). 132.  
 Гaп, 580, 606(2), 624.  
 Гaп, 166.  
 Гeapóиn, 115.  
 Гe, 132.  
 Гeal, 132.  
 Гeanna, 132.  
 Гeapиl, 141, 166.  
 Гeиnim, 371.  
 Гeit, 43(4).  
 Гeoиdaп, 365.  
 Гeoиdaп, 373.  
 Гeuz, 80.  
 Гibé, 235.  
 Гiнeаu, 452.  
 Гile, 106.  
 Гiоpиa, 166.  
 Гiаr, 165.  
 Гié, 161.  
 Гiuaиl, 87.  
 Гiním, 379.  
 Гióиm, 105.  
 Гióиr, 379.  
 Гió, 10, 114.  
 Гo, conj., 26e, 2<sup>2</sup>5, 549  
 Гo, prep., 39, 625.  
 Гo ceann, 613d.  
 Гo тé маj, 435.  
 Гoиn, 315b.  
 Гráиnа, Гráиnоe, 10, 166.  
 Гrainин, 149.  
 Гreim, 43(4), 102, 200.  
 Гriаan, 81.  
 Гuиl, 316b.  
 Гuиn, 278.  
 Гuиt, 104.  
  
 i, 39, 186, 226, 604, 627  
 i, pron., 211.  
 i, noun. ua, 132.  
 iap, prep., 579.  
 iap, 440.

ιαρχέαρ, 442  
 ιανή, 229, 602(1), 628.  
 ιανάρας, 434.  
 ιαναρίτα, 314.  
 ιαν, *pronoun*, 238.  
 ιαν, *prep.*, 39, 535, 627.  
 ιαν (ion) *prefix*, 286.  
 ιανέ, 434.  
 ιαν-φειειρεανα, 396.  
 ιανιανό, 419.  
 ιανηή, 35c.  
 ιαναν, 198.  
 ιανανια, 198.  
 ιανάν, 166, 493.  
 ιανέύρα, 603.  
 ιανά, 154.  
 ιαν-ποιτα, 285.  
 ιανπιν, 166.  
 ιανπιρ, 452.  
 ιανπαν, 417.  
 ιαν, *conj.*, 170.  
 ιαν, *verb*, 156, 323, 584.  
 ιανοι, 141.  
 ιαντεαρ, 433, 436.  
 ιαντιζ, 433, 436.  
 ιανε, 416.  
 ιαν, *pronoun*, 238.  
  
 ιά, 132.  
 ιαναιη, 35c, 315c.  
 ιανα, 123.  
 ιανέτε (ιά), 132.  
 ιανέαντα (ιά) 132.  
 ιανίη, 130.  
 ιαντιζ, 438.  
 ιαντεαρ, 441.  
 ιαντιαρ, 411.  
 ιαντέ, 86.  
 ιάν, 198.  
 ιανόραν, 70.  
 ιαναιη, 35a.  
 ιανταλ, 438.  
 ιαντοιη, 441.  
 ιαντυανό, 441.  
 ιαντα, 86.  
 ιε, 39, 151, 187, 221, 613d, 629.  
 ιεαναν, 103.  
 ιεανη, 18, 69.  
 ιεαс, 88.  
 ιεαз, 316d.  
  
 ιεαн. 316c.  
 ιεанб, 9, 64.  
 ιεанамна, 290.  
 ιеара, 105.  
 ιеар, 421.  
 ιеармуйз, 438.  
 ιеиз, 316d.  
 ιеиз, 315a.  
 ιеим, 87.  
 ιеине, 113.  
 ιеи, 278.  
 ιеиб, 542.  
 ιиа, 166.  
 ιиi, 75.  
 ιион, 67.  
 ιици, 88.  
 ιо (ιá), 182.  
 ιоc, 15.  
 ιонз, 10, 82.  
 ιуан, 447.  
 ιуc, 87.  
 ιуct, 115.  
 ιузa, 160, 166.  
 ιуиb, 87.  
  
 ιа, 21g.  
 ιаc, 64, 69, 487, etc  
 ιаcнaн, 70.  
 ιаnаn, 65.  
 ιаnоиn, 35a.  
 ιаnоm, 104.  
 ιаniln, 32 (note).  
 ιаnит, 447.  
 ιаnреаn, 452.  
 ιаnт, 143, 166.  
 ιаnтеаr, 42d.  
 ιаnа, 14, 110.  
 ιаllаct, 94.  
 ιаoи, 55.  
 ιаи, 21g, 453, 557.  
 -ιаи, 467b.  
 ιаnсаc, 57.  
 ιаnсuizеaсt, 565.  
 ιаnзaн, 9, 65.  
 ιаnaii, 132.  
 ιеаcan, 66.  
 ιеар, 14.  
 ιеара, 166.  
 ιи, 132.  
 ιиle, 118, 175, 176, 511.

miτip, 144.  
 miτi, 315a.  
 minic, 166.  
 minig, 315e.  
 mionca, 166.  
 mionna (mi), 132.  
 mioρa (mi), 132.  
 miτoe, 163.  
 miτe, 205.  
 mná, 132.  
 mo, 179, 521.  
 mó, 166.  
 móiue, 163.  
 móin, 103, 131.  
 mol, 315a.  
 molao, 289.  
 molta, 284.  
 móη, 137, 166.  
 móηon, 198.  
 móη-γeιeρeη, 177.  
 muδa, 433.  
 muio, 270.  
 mülle, 113.  
 Muιηη, 115.  
 mullac, 58.  
 munä, 26e, 550.  
 munao, 278.  
 müη, 67.  
 ná, 14, 40f.  
 ná, 14, 156.  
 ná Σo, 452.  
 náč, conj., 26e.  
 náč, rel. pron., 235.  
 náčaη, 278(6).  
 nátmä, 119.  
 náoi, 507.  
 náonbaη, 177.  
 náη, 278(6), 549.  
 -ne, 184.  
 neač, 64.  
 neam-, prefix, 455.  
 neamt, 64, 198, 650.  
 neaηa, 166.  
 neim-, 455.  
 neim-γeιanamlačt, 462.  
 neul, 67.  
 ni, 21g.  
 ni, noun., 187, &c.  
 nic, 487, &c.

niō, 114, 157, 158  
 niοη, 278.  
 niοη, 157, 158.  
 noč, 234.  
 nō Σo, 550.  
 nuadó, 494(2).  
 nuadη, 557.

O, pronoun, 238.  
 ó, noun, 132, 487, &c.  
 ó, prep., 189, 222.  
 obaη, 35a, 88.  
 očt, 507.  
 ó θeаη, 441.  
 oιóče, 434.  
 oileán, 62.  
 oιreao, 198.  
 oιrčeаη, 442.  
 ól, 316a.  
 olann, 35a.  
 olc, 166.  
 ómáio, 88.  
 ómád, 148.  
 ómlač, 58.  
 ór, 632.  
 ořgaiη, 298 (note),  
 ó θuaiη, 441.

páθiaiγ, 115.  
 paitiη, 88.  
 páiηc, 87.  
 paoηač, 486.  
 'pé i 69.  
 peann, 66.  
 peaηra, 120.  
 pižiηn, 35a.  
 piingiηn, 35a, 199.

paθčaη, 329.  
 paθčaη, 325.  
 pašaη, 412.  
 pánoaγ, 420.  
 pánpaη, 420.  
 paιb, 279, 325.  
 paιuče, 363.  
 peamtaη, 141.  
 peim, 87.  
 peub, 259.  
 pi, 32.  
 piacetaη, 421.

բաշեառ, 421.  
 բառ, 64.  
 բաշո, 420.  
 բաշե, 132.  
 բառե, 381.  
 բաշ, 161.  
 բաշա, 132.  
 բաշ, 290, 316a.  
 բա, 279.  
 բա, 161.  
 բաշառ, 421.  
 բօմ, 224, 633  
 բօմիր, 224.  
 բօմուտ, 199.  
 բաց, 279.  
  
 ՏԱ(Ը)ՐԱՆ, 130, 473(2).  
 ՔԱՅԵՒԹ, 5b.  
 ՔԱՇ, 98.  
 ՔԱՐ, 238,  
 ՔԱԼ, 438.  
 ՔԱՆ, 238.  
 ՔԱՐ, 161.  
 ՏԱՇԱՐ, 447.  
 ՔԱՌ, 114.  
 ՔԵ, pronoun, 210.  
 ՔԵ, numeral, 508.  
 -ՔԵ, 184.  
 ՔԵԱՌ, 507.  
 ՔԵԱՌԱՐ, 177, 481.  
 ՔԵԱՄՔՈՅ, 152.  
 -ՔԵԱՆ, 184.  
 ՔԵԱՆ, 494(2).  
 ՔԵԱՆ, 14.  
 ՔԵԱՐ, 316e.  
 ՔԵԻՔԵԱՆ, 205.  
 ՔԵԻՔԵԱՐ, 177, 481.  
 ՔԵՕ, 195, 238.  
 ՔԵՕՆ, 66.  
 ՔԵՕՆ, 67. .  
 ՔԵԱՈՒ, 315b.  
 ՔԵԱՐ, 316c.  
 ՔԵԱԼ, 66, 67.  
 ՔԵԱՆԱ, 86.  
 ՔԵԱՆԱՐՈՅ, 42c.  
 ՔԵԱՆ, 86.  
 ՔԵԱՌ, 131.  
 ՔԵԱՆԵ, 88.  
 ՔԵՕՒ, 87.  
 ՔԵՐԻՕԲԲԱՅ, 280.

ՐԵԱՐ, 316b.  
 ՐԵ, 210.  
 ՐԱ, 166.  
 ՐԱՐ, 441.  
 ՐՈՅԵ, ՐՈՅ, 239.  
 ՐԻՆ, adj., 14, 195  
 ՐԻՆ, pronoun, 238  
 ՐԻՆ, 14.  
 ՐԻՆԵ, ՐԻՆԻ, 239.  
 ՐԻՕՐ, 436.  
 ՐԱՅԵԱԼ, 35c, 290.  
 ՐԱՅՈ, 238.  
 ՐԱՅՐ, 132.  
 ՐԱՅԲԲԱՅ, 65.  
 ՐԼԱՆ, 66.  
 ՐԼԱՌ, 38  
 ՐԼԱԾ, 132.  
 ՐԼԵՇԵ, 131.  
 ՐԼՈՒՆՆԵ, 113.  
 ՐԼԱԾ, 68.  
 ՐՄԱՅԱՆ, 315b.  
 ՐՄԵՍՐ, 66.  
 ՐՆԱՄ, 316a.  
 ՐՈ, adj., 195.  
 ՐՈ, pron., 238.  
 ՐՈ, prefix, 286, 455  
 ՐՈՎԱՐ, 145.  
 ՐՈՒՆ, 195.  
 ՐՈՒՐ, 441.  
 ՐՐԵՍՐ, 89.  
 ՐՐԱԽՈ, 87.  
 ՐՐԱԾՈ, 64.  
 ՐՐՈՒԵԱՄ, 420.  
 ՐՐՈՒՐՈ, 420.  
 ՐՐՈՆ, 131.  
 ՐՐԱՇ, 104.  
 ՐՐԱՐ, 436.  
 ՐՐՈ, 238.  
 ՐԱՒԼ, 49(1), 90.  
 ՐԱԼ, 14, 551, 558.  
 ՐԱԼ, 14, 49(1), 90

ՇԱՅԵԱՐ, 345.  
 ՇԱԶԱՄ, 400.  
 ՇԱՄ, 318.  
 ՇԱԽ, 103.  
 ՇԱԽԱՌ, 279, 399  
 ՇԱԼԱՄ, 131,  
 ՇԱԼ, 438.  
 ՇԱՆԱԾ, 402.

էանցար, 403.  
 տար, *verb*, 399.  
 տար, *prep.*, 230, 634.  
 տարեա, 426,  
 տաշար, 320.  
 տե, 148, 166.  
 տե, 237.  
 տեած, 132.  
 տեած, 406.  
 տեացամ, 400.  
 տեամար, 128.  
 տեար, 440, 441.  
 տեիչ, 408.  
 տելչ, 316d.  
 տելե, 113, 131.  
 տելիչ, 409.  
 տեօ, 148, 166.  
 տեար, 440, 441.  
 տրօեած, 406.  
 տիչ, 132.  
 տիչեալին, 112.  
 տիմ, 390.  
 տիմեալ, 603  
 տինքար, 649.  
 տօօծած, 406.  
 տիր, 89.  
 տիրում, 166.  
 տօրիմ, 166.  
 էօր, 436.  
 տսնիրաօ, 351.  
 տօբար, 68.  
 տօլ, 92.  
 էօլի, 440, 441.  
 տօլչ, 603.  
 տրայն, 603.

տիւ, 39, 231, 604, 635.  
 տիւար, 505.  
 տիւարո, 603.  
 տիւելը, 166.  
 տիւէց, 316d.  
 տիւսոն, 166.  
 տիւնի, 177, 481.  
 տրօիչ, 76 (note).  
 տրօմ, 162 462.  
 տրսալլ, 88.  
 տն, 531.  
 էսարօ, 440, 441.  
 տսարչեալր, 442.  
 էսար, 436.  
 տսչ, 279.  
 տնի, 89.  
 տնիրչ, 166.  
 տուլլեաօ, 198.  
 տսրձ, 205.

սձ, 132.  
 սաւի, 87.  
 սաւած, 58.  
 սարալ, 35b, 14L  
 սճ, 88.  
 սեալ, 66.  
 սօ, 196.  
 սւ, 132, 489.  
 սւե, 197, 201.  
 սւնչ, 114.  
 սւսարօ, 130  
 սւմ, 232, 636.  
 սիր, 161.  
 սսսր, 166.  
 սրձ, 166.

Αρ η-α ένη ; γελό  
ν' ία Καταιλ ογυρ ο'ά θυρόεαν  
35 ογυρ 37 Σηάριο θόρη αν τηάξα,  
βατε-ατα-ειατ.





UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



**A 000 025 595 0**

